

EDUCATIONAL SERIES
JOHN NIXON, F.C.A.

California
National
Museum



UCSB LIBRARY

X-27670

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

LONGMANS' COMMERCIAL SERIES

EDITED BY ALFRED NIXON, F.C.A.

A SPANISH GRAMMAR

LONGMANS' COMMERCIAL SERIES.

Edited by ALFRED NIXON, F.C.A.

SECRETARIAL WORK AND PRACTICE. By ALFRED NIXON, F.C.A., F.S.A.A., F.C.I.S., and GEORGE H. RICHARDSON, A.S.A.A., F.C.I.S. Also COMPANY LAW. By THOMAS PRICE, LL.B., Solicitor. Crown 8vo, 5s.

COMMERCIAL LAW. By ALFRED NIXON, F.C.A., F.S.A.A., F.C.I.S., and ROBERT W. HOLLAND, M.Sc., LL.B. Crown 8vo, 5s.

BANKING LAW. By ROBERT W. HOLLAND, M.Sc., LL.B. (Hon.) of the Middle Temple, Barrister-at-Law; and ALFRED NIXON, F.C.A., F.S.A.A., F.C.I.S. Crown 8vo, 5s.

ACCOUNTING AND BANKING. By ALFRED NIXON, F.C.A., F.S.A.A., F.C.I.S., assisted by J. H. STAGG, A.C.A. (Honours). Royal 8vo, 10s. 6d.

HANDBOOK OF GERMAN COMMERCIAL CORRESPONDENCE. By J. BITHELL, M.A. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

A SPANISH GRAMMAR: Simple and Practical. By JOHN WARREN, Teacher of Spanish at the Manchester Education Committee's School of Commerce, and at the Lower Mosley Street Schools. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO.

LONDON, NEW YORK, BOMBAY, AND CALCUTTA.

A

SPANISH GRAMMAR

SIMPLE AND PRACTICAL

BY

JOHN WARREN

PRIZEWINNER, LANCASHIRE AND CHESHIRE INSTITUTES ; MEDALLIST, SOCIETY OF ARTS
TEACHER OF SPANISH AT THE MANCHESTER EDUCATION COMMITTEE'S SCHOOL OF
COMMERCE, AND AT THE LOWER MOSLEY STREET SCHOOLS

“Llegué á las puertas de la gramática”

PERSILES Y SIGISMUNDA

LONGMANS, GREEN AND CO.

39 PATERNOSTER ROW, LONDON

NEW YORK, BOMBAY AND CALCUTTA

1910

PROFITING from the teaching experience of many years, the author of this text-book has endeavoured—

- (a) To attain the greatest simplicity in the statement of the rules.
- (b) To give a carefully selected vocabulary.
- (c) To frame the exercises on the rules previously given.

Recognizing that Spanish is mainly studied by students for commercial purposes, the author, as a business man, has kept this in view in the selection of the material used for exercises.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
PUNCTUATION	1
Vowels	2
Accentuation	2
LESSON 1:	
The Verb "to be"	4
LESSON 2	6
LESSON 3	9
LESSON 4	11
LESSON 5	14
LESSON 6	17
LESSON 7:	
Adjectives	19
LESSON 8	23
Verbs—Rule 1	24
LESSON 9:	
Pronouns (Persons and Objects)	26
Verbs—Rule 2	27
LESSON 10	29
Verbs—Rule 3	30
LESSON 11:	
Verbs—Rule 4	32
LESSON 12	35
LESSON 13:	
Verbs regular, Rule 1, 2nd and 3rd Conjugations.	39
LESSON 14	42
"Por" and "Para"	42
LESSON 15:	
Verbs, 2nd and 3rd Conjugations—Rule 3	45
LESSON 16	49
LESSON 17:	
Possessive Pronouns	52

	PAGE
LESSON 18: Comparatives	55
LESSON 19: Use of the Past Tenses	59
LESSON 20	62
LESSON 21	66
LESSON 22	69
LESSON 23: Subjunctive Mood	73
LESSON 24: Subjunctive Mood (<i>continued</i>)	76
LESSON 25	79
LESSON 26: Subjunctive Mood, Sequence of Tenses	82
LESSON 27: Subjunctive Mood (<i>continued</i>)	84
LESSON 28: Irregular Verbs	87
LESSON 29: Irregular Verbs (<i>continued</i>)	89
LESSON 30: Irregular Verbs (<i>continued</i>)	91
LESSON 31: Irregular Verbs (<i>continued</i>)	93
LESSON 32: Irregular Verbs (<i>continued</i>)	95
LESSON 33	97
LESSON 34: Irregular Verbs	100
LESSON 35: Observations on Prepositions	102
LESSON 36	104
LESSON 37: Voice of Verbs	107
LESSON 38: Passive Voice (<i>continued</i>)	109
LESSON 39: Passive Voice (<i>continued</i>)	111
LESSON 40: Uses of Se and Si	113
LESSON 41: Uses of Se and Si (<i>continued</i>)	115
LESSON 42: Uses of Se and Si (<i>continued</i>)	117

	PAGE
LESSON 43: Reflective Verbs	119
LESSON 44: The Indefinite Pronoun	122
LESSON 45: Imperative Mood	124
LESSON 46: English Defective Verbs	126
LESSON 47: Peculiar Translations	128
LESSON 48: Idioms	131
LESSON 49: Uses of <i>que</i>	133
LESSON 50: Uses of <i>que</i> (<i>continued</i>)	135
LESSON 51: Adverbs	137
LESSON 52: Verbs Governing Prepositions	140
LESSON 53: Augmentatives and Diminutives	142
LESSON 54: Augmentatives and Diminutives (<i>continued</i>)	144
LESSON 55: Augmentatives and Diminutives (<i>continued</i>)	146
LESSON 56	148
LESSON 57	150
LESSON 58: Past Participles	153
LESSON 59	155
LESSON 60: Peculiar Verbs	157
LESSON 61	160
LESSON 62	162
LESSON 63	167
VERBS	173
List of Principal Irregular Verbs	194
VOCABULARY—SPANISH-ENGLISH	199
VOCABULARY—ENGLISH-SPANISH	214
INDEX	229

PRONUNCIATION.

The Spanish alphabet is the same as the English, but has the additional letters **ch** (pronounced "chay"), **ll** ("lyay'"), **ñ** ("nyay'"), and **rr**, as : **chocolate** ("cho-ko-lah'-tay"), **millón** ("meel-yon'"), **niño** ("neen'-yo").

Ch, **ll**, and **rr** are considered to be *single* letters ; **k** and **w** are only used in foreign words and sound, the first as in English, and the latter like **v**.

The only letters having two sounds are **c** and **g**, both being sounded before **a**, **o**, and **u**, as in English. Before **e** and **i** they sound respectively "thay," as in the word *think*, and **khe** (guttural), as heard in the Scotch word "loch". This sound is produced at the *back* of the mouth.

Spanish is phonetic, for excepting **h**, which is always mute, and **u**, mute in the syllables **que**, **qui**, **gue**, **gui**, every letter *must* be pronounced. It is needful to sound the **u** sometimes in **gue** and **gui**, but it then carries the diaeresis, as **güe**, **ügi** (pronounced "goo-ay," "goo-ee").

The variations in the sound of the consonants are as follows :—

B, often sounded much like the English **v**, but beginners had better pronounce as in English.

C ,	ca	ce	ci	co	cu
pronounce	kah	thay	thee (soft "th")	ko	koo

The **k** sound before **e** and **i** is represented by **qu**, viz. : **que**, *kay* ; **qui**, *key*.

In some parts of Spain, as also in South America, the **c** before **e** and **i** is pronounced **s**.

Ch, always "chay," as in the word "church".

D, like English, except between vowels and at the end of words, when it is like the heavy "th," as in the English word "then". It is often left out altogether, as **Madrid** (pronounced "Madree'"), **Amado** (pronounced "Ah-mah'-o"), but the student must pronounce it.

G, ga ge gi go gu

sound *gah khe* (guttural) *khee* (guttural) *go goo*

The hard sound “*gay*” before **e** and **i** is represented by **gu**, as **gue** (pronounced “*gay*”), **gui** (“*ghee*”).

J, always guttural; the same sound that **g** has with **e** and **i**.

Ll, like “*lyeh'*,” as : **millón** (pronounced “*meel-yon'*”).

N, like “*ni*” in the word “*onion*,” viz.: **niño** (pronounce “*neen'-yo*”).

R, more strongly trilled at the tip of the tongue than in English; at the beginning of words is as strongly trilled as **rr**.

Rr, very strongly trilled (or shaken) at the tip of the tongue.

S, always soft; as in the word “*sample*”.

Z, always **th**; as in the word “*think*”.

The only letters that can be doubled are **c** and **n**; as **acceder**, **innoble**, **innavigable**.

VOWELS.

The vowels are, as in English, **a, e, i, o, u**.

Pronounced respectively : “*ah*,” “*ay*,” “*ee*,” “*o*,” “*oo*”;

as in : *father day see d'ont rule*.

The **e** and the **o** are shortened a little when followed by a consonant; as : **del, es, tener, por, amor**. **y** is sometimes a vowel; it is always pronounced like the **i** (“*ee*”).

As already stated, every letter must be pronounced, except **h**, and **u** in the four combinations already mentioned, viz. : **que, qui, gue, gui**.

ACCENTUATION.

Words ending with a consonant, excepting only **n** and **s**, are stressed on the *last* syllable. All other words, verbs included, unless they carry the acute accent, are stressed on the *last syllable but one*, as :—

español', hablar', predicador', sinceridad'.

ca'sa, ca'lle, tin'ta, plu'ma, sombre'ro.

The acute accent is only used for the purpose of showing the accented part in words pronounced contrary to rule, and to distinguish the meaning in some cases where the same word has two meanings, as :—

mi, me mi, my tú, thou tu, thy el, the él, he, etc.

The marks of interrogation and of exclamation are put twice—

inverted before the sentence and, as in English, after the sentence.

Special attention must be given to the pronunciation of **a** and **o** final, which are always sounded "ah," "oh". English people often pronounce these terminations like the "er" in the word "either," which must be carefully avoided.

Every word, no matter how long it be, can for ease in pronouncing be cut into short syllables, and the beginner is advised to enunciate all words slowly, e.g. :—

demonstrativamente, *demonstratively*.
de-mos-tra-ti-va-men-te.

Capitals are not so often used in Spanish as in English. Unless they begin a sentence, proper adjectives and pronouns are not capitalized.

a, **e**, **o** are strong vowels ; **i**, **u** are weak. The strong vowels cannot form diphthongs of themselves. Diphthongs are made up of a strong and a weak vowel.

When a word ends in more than one vowel (unless composed of two of the strong vowels), the accent falls as in words ending in a single vowel, viz. on the penultimate (last syllable but one), as :—

astu'cia, tributa'rio, perjui'cio.

When an ending is composed of two strong vowels they are treated as syllables, the first carrying the accent, as :—

Alde'a, Bidaso'a, pele'a.

All exceptions carry the accent mark to show they are contrary to rule.

When vowels come together the strong one carries the stress, as :—

re'y, due'ño, encuen'tro, refrie'ga, ace'ite.

WORDS TO PRACTISE PRONUNCIATION.

Adelantado, anticipación, campana, derecho, genio, camorra, despacho, legislatura, hogar, gitana, jabón, gorra, despabilar, oculto, eje, efluvio, gente, esponja, mezclar, queso, risa, enviar, azar, gesto, quitapesares, rocín, cortés, azafrán, lunes, azotacalles, jeroglífico, fugitivo, jornal, jinete, garita, arguir, adelantamiento, adición, caminillo, gordo, gengibre, deranchadamente, genitivo, dicho, ejercicio, egoista, espontáneamente, legítima, querido, rodilla, quemar, reparación, miércoles, azur, jardinero, juicio, girar, quieto, fructificación, jerigonza, gancho, golfo, reina, reyecico, hierro, inculto, inédito, lógico, croquis, rezar, humanidad, económico, gramática, despota, huir, industria, cronómetro, crepúsculo, averiguar, juez, ganso, humor,

demacrado, desgracia, después, cajón, despreciarían, tocamos, sábado, toquen, humilde, huso, callar, mampostería, pollagallina, podenquillo, politécnico, puñal, niñería, santuario, saqueamiento, zumbar, zelandés, zalamería, yerro, lamparilla, cena, automóvil, cinematógrafo, enero, zabullir, yedra, centro, género, amabilidad, jugar, kilómetro, ñoño, pescado, Bilbao, querella, modificar, niñería, quebrar, recado, redondeamiento, salir, juguetonamente, parlamentario, salmón, sobreabundancia, juiciosamente, sobreañadidura, abuela, química, castigueseme, habiéndoseme.

LESSON 1.

THE VERB "TO BE".

There are in Spanish two verbs used to translate the English "to be," viz., **ser** and **estar**.

The latter is used with adjectives (Lesson 7) denoting temporary or changeable conditions, also in referring to the position or locality of persons or things, *whether temporary or not*.

Ser is used in all other cases, including adjectives relating to stable conditions, or which may be said to form part of the noun, as :—

El es un hombre alto.	<i>He is a tall man.</i>
Este es un cuarto grande.	<i>This is a large room.</i>

Ser therefore answers to "what is it ?" "what kind is it ?" "whose is it ?" "whence is it ?" Examples :—

¿ Qué es él ?	<i>What is he ?</i>
El es un dependiente.	<i>He is a clerk.</i>
¿ Qué clase de libro es ?	<i>What kind of book is it ?</i>
El lápiz es corto.	<i>The pencil is short.</i>
Este vino es de España.	<i>This wine is from Spain.</i>

The possessive case (genitive) is always translated by **de**, *of*. There is no ending corresponding to the English "'s," e.g. :—

El sombrero del hombre.	<i>The man's hat.</i>
Es el sombrero del dependiente.	<i>It is the clerk's hat.</i>

Ser is also used with the words, rich, poor, happy, unhappy, diligent, lazy, honourable, etc., also before all nouns and adjectives implying natural inclinations.

The rule in its shortest form is : use **estar** to state *how* and *where*; **ser** in all other cases.

Present indicative (time of the action) of **ser** :—

yo soy	<i>I am</i>
él es	<i>he is</i>
ella es	<i>she is</i>
usted es	<i>you (polite singular) are</i>
nosotros, -as somos	<i>we are</i>
ellos, ellas, son	<i>they are</i>
ustedes son	<i>you (plural) are</i>

The subject pronouns may usually be omitted.

Nouns ending in **a**, **d**, **ion**, are feminine, all others are masculine, with some few exceptions to be mentioned later.

NOTE.—A verb having different persons for its subjects agrees with the pronoun understood ; as :—

El dependiente y su hijo (ellos) son altos. *The clerk and his son are tall.*

V. y yo (nosotros) somos altos. *You and I are tall.*

VOCABULARY.

el libro, <i>the book</i>	el señor, <i>the gentleman</i>
el padre, <i>the father</i>	la señora, <i>the lady</i>
el color, <i>the colour</i>	bueno, a, <i>good, well</i>
la tinta, <i>the ink</i>	no (precedes the verb), <i>no, not</i>
el sombrero, <i>the hat</i>	un, una, a, <i>an</i>
el periódico, <i>the newspaper</i>	de quién, <i>of whom, whose ?</i>
el lápiz, <i>the pencil</i>	qué, <i>what ?</i>
el dependiente, <i>the clerk</i>	negro, a, <i>black</i>
el origen, <i>the origin</i>	de dónde, <i>whence ?</i>
el hombre, <i>the man</i>	esto, este, esta, <i>this</i>
el vino, <i>the wine</i>	ó, or
la pluma, <i>the pen</i>	de, of ; el, <i>the</i>
la nación, <i>the nation</i>	al (m. sing.), to the
la clase, <i>the class</i>	del (m. sing.), of the

EXERCISE 1.

(Notice that the nominative pronoun is often omitted.)

1. ¿Qué es esto ? 2. ¿Es un libro español (Spanish) ?
3. ¿De qué nación es este señor ? 4. El es de España (Spain).
5. ¿No es él francés (French) ? 6. No, señor; él es alemán (German).
7. ¿De quién es este libro ? 8. Es de su (your) padre de V. (usted).
9. ¿De qué color es la tinta ? 10. La tinta es negra.
11. ¿De quién es este sombrero ? 12. Es del francés (Frenchman).
13. ¿Qué periódico es esto ? 14. Es un periódico español.
15. ¿De quién es este lápiz ? 16. Es del dependiente.

17. ¿Qué es este hombre? 18. Este hombre es dependiente.
 19. ¿Es él gordo (stout) ó delgado (thin)? 20. Es un hombre gordo.
 21. ¿Es buena la señora? 22. Sí, señor, es muy (very) buena.
 23. ¿Es V. rico? 24. No, señor; yo no soy rico.
 25. ¿Es ese (that) un buen libro? 26. Sí, es un libro muy bueno.
 27. ¿Es el libro grande (large) ó pequeño (small)? 28. El libro es grande.
 29. ¿Qué clase de libro es? 30. Es un libro muy (very) bueno.
 31. ¿De dónde es V.? 32. Soy de Barcelona.
 33. ¿Qué vino es ese? 34. Es vino de España.
 35. ¿Es buena la tinta? 36. No; la tinta no es buena.
 37. ¿Es de V. esta pluma? 38. No; es de la señora.

1. Is the clerk thin or stout? 2. He is very thin.
 3. Whose is this book? 4. It is the Frenchman's (del francés).
 5. What is he? 6. He is a clerk.
 7. What book is that? 8. It is a Spanish book (libro español).
 9. What is this? 10. It is a hat.
 11. Is that a pencil or pen? 12. It is a pen.
 13. Who is that clerk? 14. He is the French clerk.
 15. Is the man rich? 16. No, sir; he is poor (pobre).
 17. Is this wine from Spain? 18. Yes, it is from Tarragona.
 19. Is not your (su) sister happy? 20. Yes, she is very happy.
 21. What kind of hat is it? 22. It is a black hat (sombrero negro).
 23. Is that a good newspaper? 24. Yes, it is very good.
 25. Of what nation is he? 26. He is a Spaniard.
 27. Are you German? 28. No, sir; I am French.
 29. Is not this pen yours (de V.). 30. No; it is the German's.
 31. Is the ink good? 32. The ink is not (no es) good.
 33. Whose hat is this? 34. It is the lady's.
 35. Is this book yours, sir? 36. No; it is my father's.

LESSON 2.

Estar, as stated in Lesson 1, is used in cases where the condition is of a temporary nature, and the student is asked to notice carefully the difference between a condition of any thing, person, etc., which may be easily changed *in both directions*, or which does not affect in any way the nature of the person or thing, nor refer to the action of doing anything (**estar**), and the adjective meaning *what kind* a person or thing is (**ser**). Compare:—

- El chico está sucio.
 El chico es bueno.
 El chico está bueno (bien).

- The boy is dirty.*
The boy is good.
The boy is well.

El chico es alto.	<i>The boy is tall.</i>
El chico está aquí.	<i>The boy is here.</i>
El chico es holgazán.	<i>The boy is lazy (naturally).</i>

Las montañas están siempre cubiertas de nieve.

The mountains are always covered with snow.

Notice that the snow is not an attribute of the noun mountain.

The student must also be careful to note that estar is *always* used to state where any thing, building, or person is—or, in other words, this verb is used to denote place or situation, *whether temporary or not*. Examples :—

¿ Dónde está el hombre ?	<i>Where is the man ?</i>
El está en la estación.	<i>He is in the station.</i>
¿ Dónde está la estación ?	<i>Where is the station ?</i>
Está en la calle del rey.	<i>It is in King Street.</i>
¿ Cómo está usted ?	<i>How are you ?</i>
Yo no estoy bien.	<i>I am not well.</i>
Las piezas están sucias.	<i>The pieces are dirty.</i>

Present indicative :—

Yo estoy	<i>I am</i>
él está	<i>he is</i>
ella está	<i>she is</i>
Vd. está	<i>you are (sing.)</i>
nosotros estamos	<i>we are</i>
ellos } están	<i>they are</i>
ellas }	
ustedes están	<i>you (plural) are</i>

The pronouns *his*, *her*, *your*, and *their* are translated **su**, before the noun. To prevent ambiguity the following are put after the noun, but only when necessary (Lesson 17) :—

de él, *of him*; de ella, *of her*; de usted, *of you*
de ellos, de ellas, *of them*

as :—

su sombrero de V.	<i>your hat</i>
su casa de él	<i>his house</i>

VOCABULARY.

la mesa, *the table*
la casa, *the house*
la calle, *the street*
el cuarto, *the room*

el hermano, <i>the brother</i>
la hermana, <i>the sister</i>
la bota, <i>the boot</i>
la madre, <i>the mother</i>

la tienda, <i>the shop</i>	¿ cómo ? <i>how?</i>
el jardín, <i>the garden</i>	aquí, <i>here</i>
el comedor, <i>the dining-room</i>	sobre, <i>upon</i>
el carbón, <i>the coal</i>	mi, mis, <i>my</i>
la cocina, <i>the kitchen</i>	¿ dónde ? <i>where?</i>
el parque, <i>the park</i>	¿ quién ? <i>who, whom?</i>
con, <i>with</i>	otro } <i>other</i>
triste, <i>sad</i>	otra } <i>another</i>
cansado, <i>tired</i>	cansar, <i>to fatigue, tire</i>
enfermo, <i>ill</i>	francés (adj.), <i>French</i>
sí, <i>yes</i>	el francés, <i>the Frenchman</i>
en, <i>in</i>	

EXERCISE 2.

1. ¿ Dónde está el periódico ? 2. Está sobre la mesa.
3. ¿ Quién está en el cuarto ? 4. Es el dependiente francés.
5. ¿ Cómo está V. ? 6. No estoy bien.
7. ¿ Dónde está la casa ? 8. Está en la otra calle.
9. ¿ Dónde está la orden ? 10. Está en mi libro.
11. ¿ Está V. enfermo ? 12. No, señor ; no estoy enfermo.
13. ¿ Está enferma la señora ? 14. Sí, señor ; está enferma y muy triste.
15. ¿ Dónde está su hermana ? 16. Ella está en la clase.
17. ¿ Cómo están ustedes, señoras ? 18. Estamos buenas, gracias (thanks).
19. ¿ Está su padre en Madrid ? 20. No, señor ; está en París.
21. ¿ Dónde están mis botas ? 22. Están en el otro cuarto.
23. ¿ Está el libro sobre la mesa ? 24. No, señor ; el libro está aquí.
25. ¿ Está aquí el francés ? 26. No, señor ; está en el parque son las señoras.
27. ¿ En qué calle está la tienda ? 28. Está en esta calle.
29. ¿ Dónde está el carbón ? 30. Está en la cocina (kitchen).
31. ¿ Está la señora en el jardín ? 32. No, señor ; está en la casa.
33. ¿ Cómo está el dependiente ? 34. Está muy enfermo.
35. ¿ Está V. cansado ? 36. No, señor ; no estoy cansado.
37. ¿ No está bien el padre ? 38. Sí, señor ; está muy bueno.

1. How is your father ? 2. He is not well.
3. Where are your sisters ? 4. They are in the house.
5. Where is the ink ? 6. It is on the table.
7. Where is the newspaper ? 8. It is in the other room.
9. Where is your hat ? 10. It is here, sir.
11. Is your mother unwell ? 12. She is very well, thanks.
13. Where is the pencil ? 14. It is in the dining-room.
15. Are you ill ? 16. No, sir ; I am very well, thanks.

17. Where is the shop ? 18. It is in this street.
 19. Is your mother in the garden ? 20. No, sir ; she is in the house.
 21. Is your brother tired ? 22. No, he is not tired.
 23. Where is my hat ? 24. It is in that room.
 25. Who is in the garden ? 26. My father and brother are in the garden.
 27. Where is my pencil ? 28. It is on that table.
 29. Is she here ? 30. No, she is in the shop.
 31. Are you tired ? 32. Yes, sir ; I am very tired.
 33. Is your father in the street ? 34. No, sir ; he is in that room.

LESSON 3.

The verb *to have* is translated by **tener** when it means *to hold*, *to possess*; that is, when there is no other verb with it. If *to have* is followed by another verb, the latter is a past participle, which, with only a few exceptions, end in *do*, as : **hablado**, *spoken* ; **tenido**, *had* ; **pedido**, *asked for* ; **comido**, *dined*. *To have*, with a past participle, is translated **haber**. Examples :—

¿Qué tiene V. en la mano ?	<i>What have you in your hand ?</i>
Tengo un libro español.	<i>I have a Spanish book.</i>
¿Qué tiene él ?	<i>What is the matter with him ?</i>
Tiene mal de cabeza.	<i>He has the headache.</i>
¿Cuántos libros tiene V. ?	<i>How many books have you ?</i>
No tenemos ningunos libros.	<i>We have no books.</i>
¿Qué ha tenido V. ?	<i>What have you had ?</i>
Yo he tenido algunos libros.	<i>I have had some books.</i>
¿Ha hablado V. con el español ?	<i>Have you spoken to the Spaniard ?</i>
No ; he hablado con el francés.	<i>No ; I have spoken to the Frenchman.</i>

Present indicative, *to have* :—

Tener : yo tengo	Haber : yo he	<i>I have</i>
él tiene	él ha	<i>he has</i>
ella tiene	ella ha	<i>she has</i>
usted tiene	usted ha	<i>you have</i>
nosotros } tenemos	nosotros } hemos	<i>we have</i>
nosotras }	nosotras }	
ellos } tienen	ellos-as han	<i>they have</i>
ellas }		
ustedes tienen	ustedes han	<i>you (pl.) have.</i>

Notice well that the negative always precedes the verb, as **no tenemos**, *we have not*. The words “some,” “any,” are often omitted ; or, if the meaning is *a little*, *a few*, the translation is **un poco de**, as :—

¿ Tiene V. pan ? *Have you any bread ?*
 Tenemos unos panes. *We have a few loaves.*

VOCABULARY.

los padres, <i>the parents</i>	listo -a <i>ready</i>
la mano, <i>the hand</i>	la niña, <i>the girl</i>
el papel, <i>the paper</i>	¿ quién ? <i>who ?</i>
el despacho, <i>the office</i>	la respuesta, <i>the reply</i>
la gramática, <i>the grammar</i>	Francia, <i>France</i>
la fruta, <i>the fruit</i>	dentro de, <i>within</i>
el pan, <i>the bread</i>	España, <i>Spain</i>
el queso, <i>the cheese</i>	español, <i>Spaniard, Spanish</i>
la cama, <i>the bed</i>	alguno-a, <i>some, any</i>
la ciudad, <i>the town, city</i>	ninguno-a, <i>none</i>
el tintero, <i>the inkstand</i>	grande, <i>large</i>
el teatro, <i>the theatre</i>	el bolsillo, <i>the pocket</i>
la carta, <i>the letter</i>	hay, <i>there is, there are</i>
nuestro, <i>our</i>	no (verb), ni (noun), ni (noun), neither, nor
pero, <i>but</i>	
aplicado-a, <i>diligent</i>	dentro de poco tiempo, <i>soon</i>

Señor is contracted to Sr.; señora to Sra.

EXERCISE 3.

1. ¿ Qué tienen ellos en la mano ? 2. Ellos tienen un libro español.
3. ¿ Dónde tiene V. los papeles ? 4. Tengo los papeles en el bolsillo.
5. ¿ Tiene ella algunos libros ? 6. Ella no tiene ningunos libros.
7. ¿ Qué gramática es esa ? 8. Es la gramática española.
9. ¿ De qué color es el libro ? 10. El libro es negro.
11. ¿ Dónde están la fruta y el vino ? 12. Están sobre la mesa.
13. ¿ Tienen Vs. pan y queso ? 14. Tenemos pan, pero no tenemos queso.
15. ¿ Cómo están los padres ? 16. La madre no está buena, pero el padre está muy bueno.
17. ¿ Qué vino es ese ? 18. Es vino de Francia.
19. ¿ Está lista la señora ? 20. Lo (so) estará dentro de poco tiempo (time).
21. ¿ Dónde está su hermano ? 22. Nuestro hermano está en la cama.
23. ¿ Es buena esta pluma ? 24. No, señor ; no es buena.
25. ¿ Tienen ellos los periódicos ? 26. No tienen ni periodicos ni libros.
27. ¿ Qué hay en el tintero ? 28. Hay tinta negra.
29. ¿ Dónde está la fruta ? 30. La fruta está sobre la mesa.
31. ¿ Hay buena fruta en España ? 32. Sí, señor ; muy buena.
33. ¿ Es aplicada la niña ? 34. No, sr ; la niña no es aplicada.
35. ¿ Son Vs. aplicados ? 36. Sí, sr ; somos muy aplicados.

37. ¿ Dónde está el teatro ? 38. Está en la otra calle.
 39. ¿ Tiene él un despacho ? 40. Si, tiene un despacho grande.
 41. ¿ Cómo está su hermana ? 42. Está muy bien, gracias.
 43. ¿ Es grande la ciudad ? 44. Si, la ciudad es muy grande.
 45. ¿ Tiene V. un lápiz ? 46. No, pero mi hermana tiene uno.

1. Are you diligent ? 2. Yes, sir; we are diligent.
 3. Have you a pen ? 4. Yes, we have two (dos) pens.
 5. What have they ? 6. They have two books.
 7. Have you a grammar ? 8. Yes, the large grammar.
 9. Has she the letter ? 10. No, her brother has the letter.
 11. Have they the cheese ? 12. No, we have the bread and cheese.
 13. Have you (pl.) any books ? 14. No, we have no books.
 15. Who has my boots ? 16. I have your boots.
 17. What have you in your hand ? 18. I have the ink and the pencils.
 19. Has he the reply to my letter ? 20. No, my brother has it (*la tiene*).
 21. Who has my inkstand ? 22. The clerk has an inkstand.
 23. Has your father my pen and ink ? 24. No, my sister has the pen, ink, and paper.
 25. Have you his hat ? 26. No, I have my hat.
 27. Have they the newspapers ? 28. No, my father has the newspapers.
 29. What book is that ? 30. It is the grammar.
 31. Have they any fruit ? 32. Yes, they have some fruit.
 33. Where is the lady ? 34. She is in the house.

LESSON 4.

Examples to illustrate the use of **ser** and **estar** (Lessons 1 and 2) :—

SER.

- ¿ Qué edificio es esto ?
What building is this ?
 Es una escuela.
It is a school.
 Es una escuela grande.
It is a large school.
 Es la escuela mercantil.
It is the Commercial School.
 La niña es hermosa.
The girl is pretty.
 El hombre es enfermizo.
The man is sickly (by nature).
 El libro es para mi hermano.
The book is for my brother.

ESTAR.

- ¿ Dónde está ese edificio ?
Where is that building ?
 La escuela está en la calle del príncipe.
The school is in Prince Street.
 La escuela está muy limpia.
The school is very clean.
 Aquí está la escuela mercantil.
The Commercial School is here.
 La niña está cansada.
The girl is tired.
 El hombre está enfermo.
The man is ill (temporary).
 El libro está sobre la mesa.
The book is on the table.

SER.

- ¿ Es¹ pianista aquel hombre ?
Is that man a pianist ?
- El muchacho es bueno.
The boy is good (by nature).
- ¿ Es¹ estudiante ese joven ?
Is that young man a student ?
- La mujer es limpia (habitually).
The woman is cleanly.
- El azúcar es dulce.
Sugar is sweet.
- ¿ A qué hora es la comida ?
At what time is dinner ?
- Es el sombrero de mi hermano.
It is my brother's hat.
- El maestro es severo.
The teacher is severe.
- El pobre es viejo.
The poor man is old.

ESTAR.

- El pianista está aquí.
The pianist is here.
- El muchacho está bueno.
The boy is well.
- Está estudiando sus lecciones.
He is studying his lessons.
- Esta mujer no está limpia.
This woman is not clean.
- Aquí está el azúcar.
Here is the sugar.
- La comida está servida.
(The) dinner is served.
- ¿ Dónde está el sombrero de mi hermano ?
Where is my brother's hat ?
- El maestro está en la escuela.
The teacher is in the school.
- El pobre está triste.
The poor man is sad.

The definite article "the" is translated **el** before masculine, and **la** before feminine nouns *singular*.

Lo is used with abstract nouns (Lesson 6).

The plurals are **los**, masculine ; **las**, feminine.

a-el (to the) and **de él** (of the) are contracted to **al** and **del**, *masculine singular* only.

For the sake of sound the masculine **el** is used before the feminine nouns *singular* which begin with **a** and **ha**, *when the same carry the accent*, not otherwise. Examples :—

Examples :—

el alma, <i>the soul</i>	las almas, <i>the souls</i>
el hacha, <i>the axe</i>	las hachas, <i>the axes</i>
el área, <i>the area</i>	las áreas, <i>the areas</i>
el ancla, <i>the anchor</i>	las anclas, <i>the anchors</i>

¹ After *ser* the article *a* and *an* is often omitted when denoting country, profession, employment, etc.

Notice :—

¿ Quién es ?	<i>Who is it ?</i>
Soy yo.	<i>It is I.</i>
Somos nosotros.	<i>It is we.</i>
Son ellos.	<i>It is they.</i>

The indefinite article "a," "an," is translated **uno** (masculine), **una** (feminine), but the former drops the **o** before the noun singular. E.g. *un hombre*, a man ; *una mujer*, a woman.

In like manner to the definite article, the feminine **una** becomes **un** before nouns commencing in accented **a** or **ha** ; as, *un alma*, *un hacha*, etc.

Translate "from" by **de**, except when it means the beginning of time or place, as :—

Desde mí juventud. *From my youth.*

He venido desde Londres, y voy hasta Glasgow.

I have come from London and I am going to Glasgow.

The past participle, 1st conjugation, is formed from the infinitive by changing the final **r** into **do**, as : *amar*, to love ; *amado*, loved ; and as stated Lesson 3, *haber* translates the English "to have" before all past participles.

Examples :—

He tenido la carta. *I have had the letter.*

¿Dónde ha estado V.? *Where have you been?*

Past participles cannot be used alone, except idiomatically.

VOCABULARY.

el muchacho, <i>the boy</i>	el principio, <i>the beginning</i>
la cuenta, <i>the account</i>	la escuela, <i>the school</i>
el dinero, <i>the money</i>	el principe, <i>the prince</i>
la lección, <i>the lesson</i>	nacional, <i>national</i>
el pianista, <i>the pianist</i>	la comida, <i>the dinner</i>
el principio, <i>the beginning</i>	el azúcar, <i>the sugar</i>
la mantequilla, <i>the butter</i>	la también, <i>also</i>
tambien, <i>also</i>	todavía no, <i>not yet</i>
largo, <i>long</i>	

enfermizo, <i>sickly</i>	lo, la, <i>it</i> (precede the verb)
rico, <i>rich</i>	los, las, <i>them</i> (precede the verb)
porque, <i>because</i>	dulce, <i>sweet</i>
limpio, <i>clean</i>	severo, <i>severe</i>
dificil, <i>difficult</i>	á, <i>at, to</i>
estado (past participle) <i>been</i>	comprar, <i>to buy</i>
comprado, <i>received</i> (past participle)	recibido, <i>received</i> (past participle)
escrito, <i>written</i> (past participle)	escrito, <i>written</i> (past participle)
yo quiero, <i>I want</i>	yo quiero, <i>I want</i>
él, ella, quiere, <i>he, she, wants</i>	él, ella, quiere, <i>he, she, wants</i>

EXERCISE 4.

1. ¿Dónde está la respuesta á mi carta? 2. No sé (I do not know) no la tengo yo.

3. ¿ Ha recibido V. la carta de su padre ? 4. Todavia no, señor.
 5. ¿ Son difíciles las lecciones ? 6. Si, son difíciles al principio.
 7. ¿ Dónde ha estado el muchacho ? 8. Ha estado en el despacho.
 9. ¿ Ha escrito V. la carta ? 10. No ; el dependiente la ha escrito.
 11. ¿ Quiere V. comprar un periódico ? 12. No ; porque tengo un libro.
 13. ¿ Qué quiere la niña ? 14. Quiere fruta, vino y mantequilla.
 15. ¿ Ha comprado V. el sombrero ? 16. Sí, lo he comprado en esa tienda.
 17. ¿ Dónde está el teatro nacional ? 18. No hay teatro nacional.
 19. ¿ Ha tenido ella mis libros ? 20. Si, y ha tenido tambien su sombrero
de V.
21. ¿ Es de la señora este lápiz ? 22. No ; es del dependiente.
 23. ¿ Ha tenido V. el dinero ? 24. No lo he tenido yo.
 25. ¿ De dónde es este señor ? 26. Es de Portugal.
 27. ¿ Es bueno el libro ? 28. Sí, es un libro muy bueno.
 29. ¿ Qué carta es esa ? 30. Es la carta de mi madre.
 31. ¿ No está V. bueno ? 32. Sí, gracias ; estoy muy bueno.
 33. ¿ Son ricos estos señores ? 34. No son muy ricos.
 35. ¿ De quién es este dinero ? 36. Es de V., señor.
 37. ¿ Han tenido Vds. mis plumas ? 38. No ; no las hemos tenido.

1. Where is the theatre ? 2. I don't know ; it is not in this street.
3. Are you tired ? 4. No ; I am not very tired.
5. Have you bought the wine ? 6. No ; my father has bought it.
7. Whose is this pencil ? 8. It is the clerk's.
9. What do you want ? 10. I want my grammar.
11. Is Spanish difficult ? 12. It is not very difficult.
13. Have you had the money ? 14. No ; we have not had it.
15. Is the account very long ? 16. Yes ; it is very long.
17. Where is your mother ? 18. She is in the garden.
19. Has she been here ? 20. She has not been here to-day (hoy).
21. Has he had my pen ? 22. No, he has not had your pen.
23. What do you want ? 24. I want to buy fruit.
25. Have you written your lesson ? 26. I have not written my lesson.
27. Who has been here ? 28. The Spaniard has been.
29. Is the beginning difficult ? 30. Yes ; it is very difficult.
31. Where is the money ? 32. It is on the table.
33. Have you received the letters ? 34. No, I have not received them.

LESSON 5.

Most of the Spanish verbs are regular and of the 1st conjugation. To conjugate means to change the termination of the infinitive so as

to show *who* does the action, and to show the tense, or time, of the action.

The tense which shows the present is called the “present indicative,” and is formed from the infinitive, as follows :—

Comprar	<i>to buy</i>
Yo compr o	<i>I buy</i>
tú compr as	<i>thou buyest</i>
él, ella, compr a	<i>he, she, buys</i>
V. compr a	<i>you (sing.) buy</i>
nosotros-as compr amos	<i>we buy</i>
vosotros-as compr ais	<i>ye buy</i>
ellos-as compr an	<i>they buy</i>
ustedes compr an	<i>you (plural) buy</i>

The **ar** termination of the infinitive is therefore changed to **o**, **as**, **a**, **amos**, **ais**, **an**.

The student will do well to note that with only six exceptions (Lesson 13) the first person singular of the present indicative ends in **o** in all verbs whether *regular* or *irregular*. The 1st person plural (“we”) always ends in **mos**. The 3rd person plural (“they” and “you” (plural)) always ends in **n**.

It will be seen that the verb ends differently in each person, consequently the nominative pronouns (“I,” “thou,” “he,” etc.) are often omitted. Do not forget that the rule for pronunciation applies equally to verbs, and consequently, as each person ends in a vowel, **n** or **s**, they are all stressed on the last syllable *but one* (penultimate), unless specially marked to the contrary.

The 2nd persons “thou” and “ye” can only be used familiarly, and therefore will not be required by the elementary student. Translate the English “you” by **usted** (singular), **ustedes** (plural), with the verb in the *third* person, because the word really means “your honour”.

VOCABULARY.

la contestación, *the reply*
 el agua (f.), *the water*
 el gabán, *the overcoat*
 la estación, *the station*
 el ferro-carril, *the railway*
 el cigarro, *the cigar*
 el café, *the coffee*

la hora, <i>the hour (time)</i>
la leche, <i>the milk</i>
el (la) joven, <i>the young man (woman)</i>
el trabajo, <i>the work</i>
el inglés, <i>the Englishman</i>
inglés, <i>English</i>
un poco, <i>a little</i>

interesante, *interesting*
 original, *original*
 necesario, *necessary*
 joven, *young*
 ganar, *to gain, win*
 gastar, *to spend*
 estudiar, *to study*

acabar, *to finish*
 principiar, *to begin*
 jugar, *to play*
 hallar, *to find*
 desear, *to desire*
 visto, *seen.*

no (verb), ni (noun), ni (noun), *neither—nor*

EXERCISE 5.

1. ¿Qué libro desea V. ? 2. Yo deseo tener la gramática.
3. ¿Desea V. estudiar ? 4. No ; yo no deseo estudiar.
5. ¿Ha hallado V. el periódico ? 6. Sí ; yo lo he hallado.
7. ¿Dónde está el muchacho ? 8. El está jugando en la calle.
9. ¿Tiene V. agua, señor ? 10. No ; tengo café con leche.
11. ¿Han principiado Vds. la lección ? 12. Sí, sr ; hemos principiado la lección, pero no la hemos acabado.
13. ¿Dónde está la contestación del Sr— ? 14. Está en mi despacho.
15. ¿Está cansada la señora ? 16. Sí, sr ; ella está muy cansada.
17. ¿Ha recibido V. la carta ? 18. No la he recibido.
19. ¿Tiene V. papel ? 20. Sí, tengo un poco.
21. ¿Qué quiere V. ? 22. Quiero tener la carta original.
23. ¿Es larga la carta ? 24. Sí, sr ; es muy larga.
25. ¿Es difícil la lección ? 26. No es muy difícil.
27. ¿Gana mucho su amigo de V.? 28. Sí, gana mucho pero tambien gasta mucho.
29. ¿De quién es este sombrero ? 30. Es del dependiente.
31. ¿Ha escrito él la carta ? 32. Todavía no ; no tiene tinta.
33. ¿Cómo está el joven ? 34. No está muy bueno.
35. ¿Es necesario estudiar ? 36. Sí, es muy necesario estudiar.
37. ¿Qué gramática es esta ? 38. Es la gramática española.
39. ¿Tiene V. dinero ? 40. Sí ; tengo dinero inglés y español.

1. Have you begun your work ? 2. Not yet ; I have no pen.
3. Where are the young men ? 4. They are in the garden.
5. Do you want coffee or wine ? 6. I want neither coffee nor wine.
7. Who has my overcoat ? 8. It is in the office.
9. Is the lesson interesting ? 10. I find it very interesting.
11. Have you seen the boys ? 12. Yes, they are playing in the garden.
13. What do you desire, sir ? 14. I desire to finish my letter.
15. Where is the railway station ? 16. It is in the next (proxima) street.
17. Are you tired, madam ? 18. Yes, I am a little tired.

19. Why do you not study your lesson ? 20. I find that it is rather (*un poco*) difficult.
 21. Have you been to the railway station ? 22. No ; I have not been yet.
 23. What time is it ? 24. It is one o'clock (*la una*).
 25. Have you found my books ? 26. Yes, I have found them.
 27. What does he want ? 28. He wants to begin his lesson.
 29. Is it necessary to study ? 30. Yes, you must (*debe*) study the lessons.
 31. What do they want ? 32. They want coffee and cigars.
 33. Have we no Spanish money ? 34. Yes, we have a little.
 35. Where is the young man ? 36. He is in bed, sir.
 37. What have you had ? 38. We have not had anything (*nada*).

LESSON 6.

Every Spanish noun is either masculine or feminine, excepting only a few which represent abstract ideas (e.g. *ideas* of which one can only think, but not *things* one can handle).

Nouns which signify males, or professions, etc., applicable to men, are masculine, and those applicable to women are feminine.

Nouns ending in **a**, **d**, **ion**, with very few exceptions, are feminine. The others, with some exceptions (Lesson 62), are masculine.

A masculine noun ending in **o**, and most of those ending in **e**, are made feminine by changing these letters into **a**, as :—

<i>hijo, son</i>	<i>hija, daughter</i>
<i>hermano, brother</i>	<i>hermana, sister</i>
<i>pariente, relation (m.)</i>	<i>parienta, relation (f.)</i>

There is only one word ending in **o** of common use which is of the feminine gender, viz. : *mano*, hand.

Nouns referring to two or more persons or things must alter their terminations to show the plurality.

Singular nouns ending in an unaccented vowel, or accented **e**, are made plural by the addition of **s**. Other nouns are made plural by adding **es** to the singular, except those already ending in **es**, which do not change, as : *el lunes*, Monday ; *los lunes*, Mondays. Notice that words carrying a special accent mark in the singular may not require the same in the plural, since the accent then falls according to rule, viz., *habitación, habitaciones*.

When the final letter is **z** change the same to **c** before adding the **es**, as : *lápiz*, pencil ; *lápices*, pencils.

The verb **estar** is employed with all present participles, viz., that part of the English verb ending in "ing". In Spanish these end : first conjugation in **ando**, second and third in **iendo**, as :—

Estoy comprando libros	<i>I am buying books.</i>
Está estudiando su lección.	<i>He is studying his lesson.</i>
Están escribiendo una carta	<i>They are writing a letter.</i>

VOCABULARY.

la compra, <i>the purchase</i>	el buzón, <i>the letter-box (pillar)</i>
la carne, <i>the meat, flesh</i>	para, <i>for, in order to</i>
la oficina, <i>the office</i>	algo, <i>something, anything</i>
las noticias, <i>the news</i>	mucho, <i>much</i>
el pañuelo, <i>the handkerchief</i>	¿cuándo? <i>when?</i>
el almuerzo, <i>the lunch (breakfast)</i>	hoy, <i>to-day</i>
el pescado, <i>the fish</i>	antes de, <i>before (referring to time)</i>
el gusto, <i>the pleasure</i>	cerca de, <i>near</i>
el viaje, <i>the journey, voyage</i>	olvidar, <i>to forget</i>
el sello, <i>the stamp</i>	necesitar, <i>to need</i>
el chocolate, <i>the chocolate</i>	deber, <i>to must</i>
el fin, <i>the end</i>	echar, <i>to throw</i>
el cartero, <i>the postman</i>	buscar, <i>to look for, to search</i>
el edificio, <i>the building</i>	bastante, <i>sufficient, enough</i>
el correo, <i>the post, mail</i>	

EXERCISE 6.

1. ¿Qué quiere V. comprar hoy? 2. Quiero comprar algo para el viaje.
3. ¿Qué compra ella? 4. Está comprando un sombrero y algunos pañuelos.
5. ¿Tiene ella bastante dinero para sus compras? 6. Sí; tiene bastante.
7. ¿Qué desean ellos para el almuerzo? 8. Desean pescado, carne y fruta.
9. ¿A qué hora sale (*leaves, starts*) el correo? 10. Las cartas deben estar en el buzón antes de las ocho (*eight*).
11. ¿Quiere V. echar estas cartas al correo? 12. Sí; con mucho gusto.
13. ¿Ha olvidado V. los sellos? 14. No los he olvidado; los tengo aquí.
15. ¿Cuándo principia V. su viaje? 16. Principio el viaje hoy.
17. ¿Quiere V. café ó chocolate? 18. Quiero chocolate y un poco de pan.
19. ¿Necesita V. algo, señor? 20. Sí; necesito papel, pluma y tinta.
21. ¿Hay algunas cartas para mi? 22. Sí; aquí hay dos cartas para V.
23. ¿Dónde está la oficina de correos? 24. Está al fin de esta calle.
25. ¿Han acabado ellos su carta? 26. Sí; aquí la tiene V.
27. ¿Qué es ese edificio? 28. Es la oficina de correos.
29. ¿Hay algo de interesante en el periódico? 30. Sí, hay noticias muy interesantes.

31. ¿ Están Vds. cansados de su viaje ? 32. Si, estamos muy cansados.
 33. ¿ Es necesario comprar algo ? 34. Si ; debemos comprar pan y carne.
 35. ¿ Dónde está el buzón ? 36. Hay uno cerca de la estación.
 37. ¿ Qué es su hermano de V. ? 38. Es cartero.

1. What do you study ? 2. I study Spanish and French.
 3. Have you found your books ? 4. Yes, I have found them (los, before verbs).

5. What does the lady need ? 6. She needs money to (para) buy some handkerchiefs.

7. Have they forgotten the lesson ? 8. No ; they have not forgotten the lesson.

9. Are the verbs difficult ? 10. They are not very difficult.

11. Who has my letters and stamps ? 12. The boy has your letters, books, and stamps.

13. Will you put (echar) this letter in the box ? 14. I will put it in the box with much pleasure.

15. Have you had lunch ? 16. No ; we have not had lunch yet.

17. Where is the post office ? 18. It is at the end of this street.

19. Where is your brother ? 20. He is buying bread and wine for the journey.

21. Do you have fish for lunch ? 22. Yes ; we have fish, meat, wine, and fruit.

23. Have they enough wine ? 24. No ; they have not enough wine nor fruit.

25. With whom do you go to the shop ? 26. With my mother and sister.

27. When must (debe) you go (ir) to the post office ? 28. We must go at 6 o'clock (las seis).

29. What are you seeking ? 30. I am seeking my books and hat.

31. Where is the letter-box ? 32. It is near (cerca de) the end of this street.

33. Have you any news from your sister ? 34. Yes ; we have had news to-day.

LESSON 7.

ADJECTIVES.

The adjective is a word added to a noun to describe it, and answers the questions : what sort ? how many ? how much ? which ? as :-

Un hombre alegre. *A merry (joyous) man.*

Una lección fácil. *An easy lesson.*

El estudiante aplicado. *The diligent student.*

Adjectives in Spanish usually follow their noun, and can often be used instead of same, as :—

Los ricos no son siempre felices. *The rich are not always happy.*
 El francés ha venido. *The Frenchman has come.*

Adjectives ending in **o**, **an**, **or**, must change like nouns when feminine or plural. When ending in **o** this letter is changed to **a** to represent the feminine. To adjectives ending in **an**, **on**, **or**, and to those referring to nationality ending in a consonant, add **a** to represent the feminine. Examples :—

El muchacho aplicado.	<i>The diligent boy</i>
La muchacha aplicada.	<i>The diligent girl.</i>
Un discípulo holgazán.	<i>A lazy pupil (mas.).</i>
Una discípula holgazana.	<i>A lazy pupil (fem.).</i>
Él es muy emprendedor.	<i>He is very enterprising.</i>
Ella es muy emprendedora.	<i>She is very enterprising.</i>

All adjectives of other terminations than those mentioned above do not change to indicative gender, but they show the plural by their terminations like nouns, as : la lección difícil, las lecciones difíciles ; and those which end in **es** have also the plural **es** added, as el hombre cortés, los hombres corteses. The comparatives (Lesson 18), superior, inferior, menor, peor, etc., do not change when accompanying feminine nouns. Adjectives of quantity, also demonstrative adjectives, do not call for special notice.

When the English word *will* does not refer to a future action it is translated by the irregular verb **querer** (Lesson 4), as :—

Will you (meaning now) give me a book ?	¿ Quiere V. darme un libro ?
Will you (meaning now) light the gas ?	¿ Quiere V. encender el gas ?
Will they not come now ?	¿ No quieren venir ahora ?

Note well that when two or more verbs come together the second is an infinitive, excepting when the first is *to have* or *to be*, or when the first verb is followed by **que** (conjunction), that. Examples :—

quiero poderlo hacer.	<i>I want to be able to do it.</i>
lo ha hecho.	<i>he has done it.</i>
está haciéndolo.	<i>he is doing it.</i>
quiero que lo haga	<i>I want him to do it.</i>

The past participle is very often used adjectively, therefore use **estar**, not **ser**, with all past participles (Lesson 3), except when passive.

Passive means that the subject receives or suffers the action from

others, and the same requires **ser**, with **por** or **de** before the doer of the action.

In other words, use **estar** when past participles are used to describe simply, without referring to the action, as :—

La escuela está bien situada. *The school is well situated.*

¿ Está escrita la factura ? *Is the invoice written ?*

¿ Está perdida la factura ? *Is the invoice lost ?*

This matter is extensively illustrated in the 37th and following Lessons.

VOCABULARY.

el maestro, *the teacher*

el comprador, *the buyer*

el amigo, *the friend*

el hotel } *the hotel*

la fonda } *the hotel*

la palabra, *the word*

el reloj, *the watch*

el vino tinto, *the red wine*

ocupado, *occupied, busy*

alegre, *merry*

malo, *bad, ill*

pequeño, *small, little*

hermoso, a, *beautiful*

cambiar, *to change*

azul, *blue*

rojo, }
encarnado } *red*

aquel }
aquella } *that*

más, *more*

allí, *there*

todo, a, all, *every*

verde, *green*

útil, *useful*

cómodo, *comfortable*

N.B.—**ú**, (or) is changed to **ú** before **o** and **ho**, as :—

siete ú ocho, *seven or eight*

fonda ú hotel

mujer ú hombre

EXERCISE 7.

1. ¿ Es ese un buen libro ? 2. No ; es un libro malo.
3. ¿ Está cansado el maestro ? 4. Si, el maestro está muy cansado.
5. ¿ Tiene V. un jardín grande ? 6. No, sr ; nuestro jardín es pequeño.
7. ¿ Es rico aquel hombre ? 8. Creo (I think, believe) que es rico.
9. ¿ Ha venido (come) el comprador español ? 10. Todavía no ha venido.
11. ¿ Quién es aquella señora ? 12. Es una señora española y es muy alegre.
13. ¿ Es buena su hermana de V. ? 14. Es más hermosa que buena.
15. ¿ Es útil este libro ? 16. Si, sr ; es un libro muy útil.
17. ¿ Son Vs. aplicados ? 18. Si, siempre (always) somos aplicados.
19. ¿ Dónde está el vino tinto ? 20. Está allí sobre esa mesa grande.
21. ¿ Tienen ellos una casa cómoda ? 22. Si, su casa es muy cómoda.

23. ¿ Quién es aquel señor ? 24. Es un amigo enfermo de mi padre.

25. ¿ Han estado Vs. en el edificio grande ? 26. No, sr ; no hemos estado allí.

27. ¿ Qué estudia V. ? 28. Estudio la gramática española.

29. ¿ Compran Vs. pañuelos grandes ó pequeños ? 30. Compramos pañuelos grandes.

31. ¿ Qué hora es ? 32. No sé, el reloj está parado.

33. ¿ Están escritas las cartas ? 34. Si, todas están escritas.

35. ¿ Es buena la leche ? 36. No es muy buena.

37. ¿ Está V. ocupado ? 38. Si, señor, estoy muy ocupado.

39. ¿ Tienen Vds. otro libro y otra pluma ? 40. Sí, tenemos muchos libros y muchas plumas.

1. What are you buying ? 2. I am buying some Spanish books.

3. What colour are the books ? 4. They are black, green, and red.

5. What is he studying ? 6. He is studying his Spanish lesson.

7. Does he find the lessons difficult ? 8. Yes, he finds them fairly (bastante) difficult.

9. Have you any French books ? 10. Yes, I have some French and Spanish books.

11. Have they learned (aprendido) many Spanish words ? 12. Yes, many Spanish words and some French ones.

13. Is the journey long from (desde) here to Madrid ? 14. Yes, it is a very long journey.

15. Will you buy these English books ? 16. No, I do not want to buy any English books.

17. Is the news good or bad ? 18. The news is very bad.

19. Why (porqué) do you study that Spanish grammar ? 20. Because I want to learn (aprender) Spanish.

21. Have you any French stamps ? 22. Yes, I have Spanish and French stamps.

23. Must you buy Spanish money here ? 24. No ; we buy Spanish money in Paris.

25. Can you change this English money ? 26. No, but they will change it at the hotel.

27. Have you written a Spanish letter to the Spaniard ? 28. No, I have written an English letter to him, " le " (before the verb).

29. Is it a difficult lesson ? 30. Yes, I find the lesson is difficult.

31. Is the letter written with black ink ? 32. No ; it is written with red ink.

33. Will you write (escribir) this letter in Spanish ? 34. Yes, with much pleasure.

LESSON 8.

When the adjective is strictly descriptive it *must* come after the noun, but if it refers to quality, or is used as a title, it comes before the noun, as :—

un gran palacio	<i>a great palace</i>
un palacio grande	<i>a large palace</i>
un hombre pobre	<i>a poor man (a man in poverty)</i>
el pobre hombre	<i>the man, not necessarily poor but an object of pity</i>
mi querido hermano	<i>my dear brother</i>
es un hombre querido de sus compañeros	<i>he is a man beloved by his com- panions</i>

When **bueno**, **malo**, **alguno**, **ninguno**, are put before masculine nouns singular they lose the final **o**, as : *el buen hombre*.

After two or more nouns signifying persons, or living things of different genders, the adjective is made masculine plural, e.g. :—

la madre y el padre están enfermos
el muchacho y la muchacha son aplicados

When the nouns represent things in the singular the adjective is masculine, but when plural it agrees with the last noun, as :—

el pan y la carne son caros
el algodón y la lana son caros
los vestidos y las comidas son caras

Adjectives are often used instead of nouns, taking the gender and number of the noun represented, as :—

los franceses son alegres	<i>the French people are merry</i>
los ricos y los pobres	<i>the rich and the poor</i>
¿ha venido el español?	<i>has the Spaniard come?</i>

The masculine plural may signify male and female beings, or both :—

los hermanos	<i>the brothers, or the brothers and sisters</i>
los padres	<i>the parents</i>
los franceses	<i>the French, male and female, or males only</i>

Adjectives are made into adverbs by adding **mente**, as : *fácil*, easy ; *fácilmente*, easily ; but if the adjective is one that varies to indicate gender the **mente** is added to the feminine form, as : *perfecto*, *perfectamente*.

VERBS—RULE 1.

From the present indicative is formed the present subjunctive by changing the **o** of the 1st person into **e**, and adding the terminations **s** to the 2nd person singular ; **mos**, **is**, **n**, to the plurals, as :—

Compro, <i>I buy</i> ; que compre	<i>that I buy (may buy)</i>
que compres	<i>that thou buyest</i>
que compre	<i>that he, she, you may buy</i>
que compremos	<i>that we may buy</i>
que compréis	<i>that ye may buy</i>
que compren	<i>that they may buy</i>
que compren	<i>that you (pl.) may buy</i>

The imperative mood is exactly the same as the present subjunctive, excepting the 2nd persons ("thou" and "ye"), but in referring to 3rd persons **que** precedes, as :—

compra tú	<i>buy thou</i>
compre V.	<i>buy (you)</i>
que compre él, ella	<i>let him, her, buy</i>
compremos	<i>let us buy</i>
comprad	<i>buy ye</i>
comprenden Vds.	<i>buy (you, plural)</i>
que compren ellos, ellas	<i>let them buy</i>

VOCABULARY.

el guante, <i>the glove</i>	la falta, <i>the mistake</i>
el paraguas, <i>the umbrella</i>	la crema, <i>the cream</i>
la corbata, <i>the necktie</i>	la camisa, <i>the shirt, chemise</i>
la ropa, <i>the clothing</i>	la camiseta, <i>the undershirt</i>
los calzoncillos, <i>the pants</i>	pobre, <i>poor</i>
el armario, <i>the cupboard</i>	el pobre, <i>the poor man</i>
el armario de libros } <i>the bookcase</i>	¿ que tiene ? <i>what is the matter with ?</i>
el armario para libros }	copiar, <i>to copy</i>
el encaje, <i>the lace</i>	¿ cuál ? <i>which ?</i>
el norte, <i>the north</i>	cortés, <i>courteous</i>
los calcetines, <i>the socks</i>	feo, <i>ugly</i>
la modista, <i>the milliner</i>	debajo de, <i>underneath</i>
el mendigo, <i>the beggar</i>	y, <i>and</i>
el zapato, <i>the shoe</i>	chocolate, <i>chocolate, brown</i>
la alcoba, <i>the bedroom</i>	caro, <i>dear</i>
la mujer, <i>the woman</i>	mendigar, <i>to beg</i>
las medias, <i>the stockings</i>	

EXERCISE 8.

1. ¿Qué tiene el pobre? 2. El pobre está enfermo.
3. ¿Tiene ella un sombrero hermoso? 4. No, tiene un sombrero feo.
5. ¿Es la niña muy hermosa? 6. Sí, es una niña muy hermosa.
7. ¿Están cansados estos hombres y mujeres? 8. Las mujeres están cansadas pero los hombres no lo están.
9. ¿Ha hallado V. el libro español? 10. No, no lo he hallado todavía.
11. ¿Tiene V. los guantes blancos ó negros? 12. Tengo los guantes negros.
13. ¿Tiene el muchacho español mis buenos paraguas? 14. Sí, tiene los paraguas y el sombrero negro.
15. ¿Dónde están los libros encarnados? 16. Están en el armario para libros.
17. ¿Tienen ellos tinta roja ó negra? 18. Tienen la tinta negra.
19. ¿Quién tiene mi corbata blanca? 20. No sé quién la tiene.
21. ¿Quiere V. copiar estas cartas? 22. No; no quiero copiarlas.
23. ¿Es la ropa muy cara en España? 24. Sí, la ropa buena es muy cara.
25. ¿Son corteses los españoles? 26. Sí, son muy corteses pero no muy aplicados.
27. ¿Son las muestras grandes ó pequeñas? 28. Son pequeñas.
29. ¿Dónde están mis calcetines azules? 30. Están en la alcoba grande.
31. ¿Tienen Vs. mis camisas blancas? 32. No; allí están sobre la mesa.
33. ¿Cómo está V. amigo mío? 34. Malo; estoy corto de dinero.
35. ¿Quiere V. comprar lápices y plumas? 36. No; quiero papel para cartas.
37. ¿Cuál sombrero quiere V.? 38. Quiero el sombrero azul.

1. Do you want to buy lace? 2. Yes, cream and white lace.
3. What are you buying? 4. I am buying a brown hat.
5. Who is that poor man? 6. He is a poor beggar.
7. Which station is this? 8. It is the North station.
9. Where are my shoes? 10. They are under the table.
11. Have you found my handkerchiefs? 12. Yes, they were with the socks and pants.
13. What does the tall man need? 14. He needs stamps for his letters.
15. Is he a courteous man? 16. Yes, he is always courteous.
17. Have you begun your Spanish lesson? 18. Yes, and I have finished it.
19. Have you the samples of undershirts? 20. No; the clerk has all the samples.
21. Where is the milliner's shop? 22. It is at the end of that street.
23. Is the umbrella large enough? 24. I think that it is large enough.

25. Where are the gentleman's stockings? 26. They are in the kitchen cupboard.

27. What do you desire, sir? 28. I desire to have my boots and over-coat.

29. Where have you found the necktie? 30. It was in your bedroom.

31. Have you written in Spanish? 32. Yes, I always write in Spanish.

33. Which lesson have you written? 34. I have written the French lesson.

35. Have you any mistakes in your lesson? 36. No, I have no mistakes.

37. What do you want? 38. I desire you to buy (that you buy) some books.

LESSON 9.

PRONOUNS (PERSONS AND OBJECTS).

1. The pronouns given with the verb (Lesson 1) are called nominative, because they nominate or name the doer of the action.

2. The nominative answers the question "who" or "what"; or the nominative acts and the objective is acted upon.

3. The pronoun object with the preposition "to," whether it is written or left understood, is the dative, or indirect object, as : *to me, to him, to them, etc.*

4. There are two forms of the dative, viz. (1) the form called *disjunctive*, used when not accompanied by a verb, as :—

á mi á él á ella á V. á nosotros á ellos á Vds. (plural)
to me to him to her to you to us to them to you

and (2) the *conjunctive*, which must be used whenever there is a verb, and to which the disjunctive may be added. The disjunctives are added whenever there would be ambiguity, or if emphasis is desired, as :—

He has given me his book. El me ha dado su libro (á mí)

He has written a letter to us. El nos ha escrito una carta (á nosotros)

5. The dative (indirect object) and accusative (direct object) pronouns are alike, except in the 3rd persons, as :—

me, *me* or *to me*

te, *thee* or *to thee*

le, *him* or *to him*

accusative 3rd persons—

le, *her* or *to her*

lo, *it* (masc.)

le, *you (Ud)* or *to you*

la, *it* (fem.)

nos, *us* or *to us*

los, *them* (masc.)

vos, *ye*, *to ye*

las, *them* (fem.)

les, *them* or *to them*

les, *you* or *to you* (plural)

6. The accusative 3rd person always represents an article, and consequently must show the gender of same.

7. When the dative and accusative are together in the 3rd persons, the former *always* precedes the latter, as :—

<i>it to me</i>	me lo, me la
<i>it to him</i>	se lo, se la
<i>it to them</i>	se lo, se la

(Regarding the “**se**” see Lesson 10.)

8. Except in three special cases (Lesson 10), these pronouns *precede* the verb. The only words that can be placed before them in a sentence are the nominatives (par. 1) and the negation, when the phrase is negative. E.g. :—

Yo no se lo envio (á él). *I do not send it to him.*

Literally : *I not to him it send (to him).*

VERBS—RULE 2.

The imperfect indicative 1st conjugation is formed from the infinitive, by changing the **ar** to **aba**, and adding the terminations as mentioned in Lesson 8. There are only *three* verbs in the language with an irregularity in the imperfect indicative, viz. : **ser**, **ir**, and **ver**.

Imperfect indicative of **comprar** :—

compr aba	<i>I was buying, or used to buy</i>
compr abas	<i>thou wast buying, or used to buy</i>
compr aba	<i>he, she, you were buying, or used to buy</i>
compr ábamos	<i>we were buying, or used to buy</i>
compr abais	<i>ye were buying, or used to buy</i>
compr aban	<i>they were buying, or used to buy</i>

Past participles are formed from the infinitives by changing the **ar** into **ado** in the 1st conjugation, and the **er** and **ir** into **ido** in the 2nd and 3rd conjugations, as :—

amado, tenido, omitido

VOCABULARY.

el paquete, *the packet*
 el rey, *the king*
 la reina, *the queen*
 la esquina, *the corner*
 la caja, *the box, case*
 el billete, *the ticket*
 el tren, *the train*

el dia, *the day*
 el palacio, *the palace*
 le equipage, *the luggage*
 la luz, *the light*
 barato, *cheap*
 feliz, *happy*
 ayer, *yesterday*

<i>anteayer, the day before yesterday</i>	<i>ayudar, to help</i>
<i>cuando, when</i>	<i>llegar, to arrive</i>
<i>tomar, to take</i>	<i>acompañar, to accompany</i>
<i>llevar, to take, carry, wear</i>	<i>adelantar, to advance</i>
<i>enviar, to send</i>	<i>atrasar, to delay, lose time</i>
<i>dar *¹, to give</i>	<i>dispense V., } excuse me</i>
<i>apagar, to extinguish</i>	<i>dispensen VV., } beg pardon</i>

EXERCISE 9.

1. ¿ A quién ha dado V. la pluma ? 2. Se la he dado á aquel hombre.
 3. ¿ Dispense V., señor ; ha tomado V. el libro ? 4. No ; no lo he tomado.
 5. ¿ Quién tiene la carta de que habla V. ? 6. Yo se la he dado á la niña.
 7. ¿ Á qué hora llega el tren ? 8. Debe (it ought) llegar á las diez (ten o'clock).
 9. ¿ Quiere V. llevar esto á la estación ? 10. Si, señor, con mucho gusto.
 11. ¿ Es barata la crema ? 12. No ; es bastante cara.
 13. ¿ Le ha dado V. la ropa ? 14. Sí, se la daba cuando vino (came) V.
 15. ¿ Ha comprado él los billetes ? 16. Sí, los compró (bought) ayer ó anteayer.
 17. ¿ Ha apagado V. la luz ? 18. Sí, señor ; la he apagado.
 19. ¿ Á quién da V. las corbatas ? 20. Se las doy á mis hermanos.
 21. ¿ Ha escrito el dependiente la carta ? 22. No la ha escrito todavía.
 23. ¿ Ayuda V. al criado ? 24. Sí, le ayudo cada (each) día.
 25. ¿ Ha llegado el rey ? 26. No, señor ; todavía no ha llegado.
 27. ¿ Quiere V. acompañar á la niña ? 28. Si, le acompañaré con mucho gusto.
 29. ¿ Qué es eso ? 30. Es una caja para V., señor.
 31. ¿ Dónde está su amigo ? 32. Está á la esquina de la calle.
 33. ¿ Es feliz esa niña ? 34. Sí, es muy feliz.
 35. ¿ Va bien (goes well) su reloj de V. ? 36. No, atrasa un poco.
 37. ¿ Y cómo va el de V. ? 38. El mio adelanta mucho.
 39. ¿ Dónde está la reina ? 40. No sé ; no está en el palacio.
 41. ¿ Le ha enviado V. el vino ? 42. Sí, se lo he enviado.
 43. ¿ Á quién ha entregado V. el paquete ? 44. Se lo he entregado al criado.
1. What do you want ? 2. I want to send it to her.
 3. Do you give him the letters ? 4. No ; I give him the books.
 5. Have you bought the ticket ? 6. Yes, I have bought it.

¹ 1st person present indicative "doy" instead of "do".

7. Are you not well ? 8. Yes, pretty well, thanks.
9. Do you accompany the girl ? 10. Yes, I accompany her.
11. Please (sírvase V.) put out the gas. 12. With much pleasure, madam.
13. What do you give to your brother ? 14. I give him a watch.
15. At what time (hora) does the train start (sale) ? 16. It starts at 10 o'clock.
17. Where is my luggage ? 18. He has taken it to the station.
19. When does he arrive ? 20. He arrives to-day.
21. Where is the King ? 22. He is in his palace.
23. Which book do you want ? 24. I want the Spanish grammar.
25. Have you copied the letters ? 26. Yes, I have copied them.
27. Where are the samples ? 28. I have given them to the clerk.
29. Have you my umbrella ? 30. No ; your friend has it.
31. What is that ? 32. It is a parcel of books.
33. Excuse me, sir, what do you want ? 34. I want to buy gloves and pants.
35. Where are my undershirts ? 36. They are in the cupboard.
37. Do you want to buy them ? 38. No ; buy them (imperative) yourself (Vd. mismo).

LESSON 10.

As stated in Lesson 9, the dative and accusative pronouns are placed immediately *before* the verb in all but three instances, which are the infinitive, the present participle, and the imperative (except when the latter is negative). In these three special cases they are added to the verb, forming one word, but the accent falls as if no addition were made, and the word must therefore be marked with the acute accent to keep it in accordance with the rule on pronunciation. Examples :—

Deseo enviárselos á él.	<i>I desire to send them to him.</i>
Él está enviándoselos á ella.	<i>He is sending them to her.</i>
Envíeselos V.	<i>Send them (you) to him (her, etc.).</i>

When the two forms of the 3rd person come together, the dative is changed for the sake of sound into *se*, as :—

se lo, *it to him, her, you, them*, instead of le lo.

se la, " " " " " le la.

se los, } them to him, her, you, them, instead of les los (las).
se las,

Whenever in these instances there might be ambiguity the disjunctives (Lesson 9) are also used, as :—

Yo se lo envio á él.	<i>I send it to him.</i>
Yo se lo envio á ella.	<i>I send it to her.</i>
Yo se lo envio á ellos (ellas).	<i>I send it to them.</i>
Yo se lo envio á V. (á Vds.).	<i>I send it to you.</i>

The student is particularly requested to notice the construction of phrases, which are written in the following order, viz.: (1) nominative, (2) negation, (3) dative, (4) accusative, (5) verb. Example :—

I have not sent it to her
order: 1 5 2 6 4 3
as: yo no se lo he enviado (á ella)

Notice specially that **se** is the dative, *to him, her, you, them.*

Although the imperfect indicative is preferable, the verb **estar** may be used instead with the present participle of any verb, except *to come* and *to go* (**venir-ir**).

VERBS—RULE 3.

To form the past definite (preterite), 1st conjugation, change the **ar** of the infinitive into **é, aste, ó, amos, asteis, aron**, as :—

compré	<i>I bought</i>	} meaning did buy.
compraste	<i>thou boughtest</i>	
compró	<i>he, she, you (Vd.) bought</i>	
compramos	<i>we bought</i>	
comprasteis	<i>ye bought</i>	
compraron	<i>they, you (Vds.) bought</i>	

From the last person plural form the imperfect subjunctive (Lesson 23) by changing the **ron** to **se** or **ra**, adding always the terminations as present indicative, viz. :—

comprara	} (if) <i>I bought, were to buy</i>
compraras	
comprara	
compráramos	
comprrais	
compraran	

N.B.—Si, meaning *if*, present or future time, can only be used with the present indicative and imperfect subjunctive.

VOCABULARY.

el vestido, *the dress*
el negocio, *the business*
la puerta, *the door*

el criado, *the servant*
el traje, *the suit (clothes)*
el sastre, *the tailor*

el huevo, <i>the egg</i>	digo, <i>I say</i>
la fecha, <i>the date (of month)</i>	dice, <i>he, she says</i>
huevos pasados por agua, <i>boiled eggs</i>	dado, <i>given (p.p.)</i>
continuamente, <i>continually</i>	salgo, <i>I leave, start</i>
Juán, <i>John</i>	sale, <i>he, she, you start</i>
Juana, <i>Jane</i>	enseñar, <i>to show, teach</i>
gustarle, <i>to please one</i>	mostrar*, ¹ <i>to show</i>
me gusta } <i>I like</i>	llamar, <i>to call, knock</i>
me gustan } <i>I like</i>	llamarse, <i>to be called, to be named</i>
le gusta, <i>he, she likes</i>	pronunciar, <i>to pronounce</i>
frito, <i>fried</i>	pagar, <i>to pay</i>
¿ de que ? <i>of which ?</i>	aprender, <i>to learn</i>
dicho, <i>said, told (p.p.)</i>	fechar, <i>to date</i>

EXERCISE 10.

1. ¿ Qué le enseñó á V.? 2. Me enseñó sus libros.
3. ¿ Cómo se llama esto? 4. Se llama esto un vestido.
5. ¿ Cómo se llama V.? (Lesson 12). 6. Me llamo Luís.
7. ¿ Qué quiere V. hacer (to do)? 8. Quiero enseñárselo á V.
9. ¿ A quién llama mi padre? 10. Le llama á V. para enviarle al correo.
11. ¿ Quiere V. venir ahora? 12. Si, iré (will go) con mucho gusto.
13. ¿ Habló V. con el sastre? 14. No; no le he visto.
15. ¿ Se lo ha enviado V.? 16. Todavía no se lo he enviado.
17. ¿ Qué le ha comprado él? 18. Le compró un sombrero.
19. ¿ Qué le ha dicho él á V.? 20. Me ha dicho que (that) quiere comprar algo.
21. ¿ Gana V. mucho en este negocio? 22. No gano sino (but) poco.
23. ¿ Quién ha llamado á mi puerta? 24. Soy yo, señor.
25. ¿ Cómo se debe (ought one) pronunciar esta palabra? 26. Se debe pronunciarla como está escrita.
27. ¿ Quiere V. enseñárselos á él? 28. No; enséñaselos V.
29. ¿ Vaya (go) V. á llamar á su amigo? 30. No quiero, diga V. (tell) al criado que le llame.
31. ¿ Se lo ha dicho V.? 32. Sí, ya se lo he dicho.
33. ¿ Qué fecha lleva la carta? 34. Está fechada el ocho (eighth).
35. ¿ Quién tiene los huevos? 36. El criado los tiene.
37. ¿ Ha pagado V. el traje al sastre? 38. No; págueselo V.
39. ¿ Quién debe pagárselo á él? 40. Yo debo pagárselo.

1. What news is there? 2. They say (se dice) that the king is here.
3. When did you send it to him? 4. I sent it to him yesterday.

¹ See Lesson 14.

5. Who says that to her? 6. I have said that to her.
 7. What do you say? 8. I say that your friend is here.
 9. Did you speak to (con) the king? 10. Yes, I spoke to him to-day.
 11. Where are my shirts? 12. I have taken them to the servant.
 13. Has the girl given it to you? 14. Yes, she has given it to me.
 15. To whom have you given my suit? 16. I have given it to the tailor.
 17. Who has my overcoat? 18. The servant has it.
 19. At what time do you start? 20. I start (salgo) at eight o'clock (las ocho).
 21. Do you want the eggs boiled or fried? 22. I want boiled eggs.
 23. Who shows them to you? 24. My clerk shows them to me.
 25. What ought one to do (hacer) to (para) learn Spanish? 26. One must study continually.
 27. Do you like to study? 28. Yes, I like to study and learn.
 29. What is your name? 30. My name is John.
 31. What is her name? 32. Her name is Jane.
 33. Will you give them to him? 34. I do not want to give them to him.
 35. Will you give them to me? 36. No; but I will give them to her.
 37. Have you bought it from him (use dative)? 38. Yes, I bought it from him to-day.

LESSON 11.

VERBS—RULE 4.

The future indicative is formed by adding to the infinitive the terminations, **é**, **ás**, **á**, **emos**, **eis**, **án**, which are the endings of **haber**, present indicative (Lesson 3).

The future indicative of **comprar** is therefore :—

comprar é	I will buy, etc.
comprar ás	
comprar á	
comprar emos	
comprar eis	
comprar án	

The conditional indicative is formed in a similar manner, by adding **ia** (from **haber**, imperfect indicative) to the infinitive, using the same terminations as the present indicative (Lesson 5), e.g. :—

compraría	I would buy, etc.	Note that the 2nd singular in all tenses but past definite ends in s.
comprarías		
compraría		
compraríamos		
compraríais		
comprarían		

Cuando (*when*) referring to a future indefinite action must be followed by the subjunctive, as :—

se lo diré (á él) cuando venga.

I will tell it to him when he comes.

Remember that *it* and *them*, direct objects, must precede the verb in every instance save those mentioned in Lessons 4 and 10.

Where is translated by **donde** when there is no movement indicated, otherwise it is preceded by **á** or **de**, as :—

¿ Dónde está V. ?

Where are you ?

¿ De dónde viene V. ?

Whence come you ?

¿ á dónde va V. ?

Where are you going ?

It is advisable to practise the cardinal numbers, which are given in full at the end of the book. These are also used for dates, except *primero* (first), as :—

el primero de enero, *the 1st of January.*

el cinco de julio, *the 5th of July.*

They are used for the time of day, preceded by **la**, **las**, **hora** (hour) being understood. See end of book.

VOCABULARY.

el fabricante, *the maker*

la operación, *the transaction*

el resultado, *the result*

el tiempo, *the time, weather*

la librería, *the bookshop*

el aguador, *the waterseller*

el provecho, *the profit*

el ejercicio, *the exercise*

el mercado, *the market*

á casa, *at home*

ahora, *now, at present*

la manzana, *the apple*

varios, *several*

pasado mañana, *the day after to-morrow*

muchísimo, *very much*

mañana, *to-morrow*

por la mañana, *in the morning*

en seguida, *at once*

con el tiempo, *in time*

voy á, *I am going to* (before an infinitive)

va á, *he (she) is going to* (before an infinitive)

traer *, *to bring*

comer, *to eat, dine*

descansar, *to rest*

dibujar, *to sketch*

entrar, *to enter, come in*

esperar, *to hope, wait for*

obsequiar, *to be attentive, wait upon*

hacer*, *to do, make*

escribir, *to write*

gritar, *to call out, cry out*

cerrar*, *to shut*

regresar, *to return*

* All irregular verbs are marked with an asterisk.

enero, *January*
febrero, *February*
marzo, *March*

abril, <i>April</i>
mayo, <i>May</i>
junio, <i>June</i>

EXERCISE 11.

1. ¿ Va V. á (are you going to) la escuela hoy ? 2. Si, voy á la escuela todos los (every) días.
3. ¿ Ha regresado el fabricante ? 4. Va á regresar mañana.
5. ¿ Qué será el resultado de esta operación ? 6. Todavía no lo sé.
7. ¿ Ha aprendido V. el español ? 8. Lo estudio y lo aprenderé con el tiempo.
9. ¿ Hace (makes it, is it) buén tiempo ? 10. Si, hace un tiempo muy bueno.
11. ¿ Qué va V. hacer ? 12. Voy á escribir mis ejercicios.
13. ¿ Ha apagado V. la luz ? 14. No ; la apagaré en seguida.
15. ¿ Quiere V. comprar un libro á la librería ? 16. Mañana voy á comprar varios.
17. ¿ Qué grita el muchacho ? 18. Grita " agua ". Es (un) aguador.
19. ¿ Quiere V. llevar mi equipage á la estación ? 20. Lo llevaré ahora mismo.
21. ¿ Cuándo dará V. el libro al joven ? 22. Mañana, por la mañana.
23. ¿ Si yo los comprase los llevaría V. á casa ? 24. Si, los llevaré cuándo los compre V.
25. ¿ Quiere V. llamar á su amigo á casa ? 26. Sí, voy á llamarle ahora.
27. ¿ Dónde está mi ropa ? 28. Está en el armario.
29. ¿ Ha traído (brought) mi traje el sastre ? 30. Lo traerá mañana.
31. ¿ Cuándo comprará V. los billetes para el teatro ? 32. Los compraré hoy.
33. ¿ Tendremos bastante fruta ? 34. Sí, tendremos bastante para hoy.
35. ¿ Cuándo copiará él la carta ? 36. La copiará ahora.
37. ¿ Quiere V. enseñarme mi cuarto ? 38. Sí, se lo enseñaré con mucho gusto.
39. ¿ Quiere V. descansar, señora ? 40. Sí, descansaré un poco.

1. What were you doing when I entered the room ? 2. I was sketching when you came in.
3. Do you like to sketch ? 4. Yes, I like sketching very much.
5. Whom are you expecting to-day ? 6. I am expecting my friend, the Frenchman.
7. What does he want ? 8. He wants you to copy (that you copy, subj.) this letter.
9. Call my friend. 10. I will call him with much pleasure.

11. Will you dine with him to-morrow? 12. Yes, if you will accompany me.
13. When will you deliver the goods? 14. I will deliver them to-morrow.
15. Will you gain anything in this transaction? 16. Yes, we shall have a good profit.
17. Where are you going now? 18. I am going home.
19. Will you shut the door? 20. I will shut it at once.
21. When did you take the letter to the post? 22. I have not taken it; I will take it now.
23. When will you begin your exercises? 24. I will begin them to-morrow morning.
25. Where would you buy the fruit? 26. I would buy it at the market.
27. Do you like apples? 28. Yes, I like them very much.
29. When shall you study this lesson? 30. I shall study it to-day.
31. I should commence now. 32. Well (pues) I will commence at once.
33. When will the cases arrive? 34. They will arrive the day after to-morrow.
35. When will you send them to me? 36. I will send them to you to-morrow morning.
37. Why did you not come (vino) to the theatre? 38. I was not in the humour to go (ir).
39. Did they attend you well in Madrid? 40. Yes, they paid us much attention.

LESSON 12.

Some verbs are slightly irregular, but only in the tenses of Rule 1 (present indicative, present subjunctive, and imperative).

The first to notice are those conjugated like **cerrar** (see list at the end of the book) which require the additional letter **i** before the last **e** of the root in the three persons singular and the 3rd person plural, as :—

Cerrar, to shut.

yo cierro	<i>I shut</i>
tú cierras	<i>thou shuttest</i>
él, ella, V., cierra	<i>he, she shuts; you shut</i>
nosotros cerramos	<i>we shut</i>
vosotros cerráis	<i>ye shut</i>
ellos, ellas, ustedes cierran	<i>they shut, you (pl.) shut</i>

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

		IMPERATIVE.	
que cierre	<i>that I shut</i>	cierra tú	<i>close thou</i>
que cierres	<i>that thou shuttest</i>	cierre V.	<i>close (you)</i>
que cierre	<i>that { he, she, shut you shut }</i>		
que cerremos	<i>that we shut</i>	que cierre él, ella	<i>let him (her) shut</i>
que cerréis	<i>that ye shut</i>	cerremos	<i>let us shut</i>
que cierren	<i>that { they shut you (pl.) shut }</i>	cierren Vds.	<i>shut (you, pl.)</i>
		que cierren ellos, ellas	<i>let them shut</i>

Querer (*to will, to want*) in Rule 1 (Lesson 8) has the same irregularity as **cerrar**, viz. :—

quiero, quieres, quiere, queremos, queréis, quieren.

Se, before the third person of the verb, translates the English *they* (people), *one*, when used vaguely and indefinitely, and may be translated into English by the verb *to be*. It is the common way in Spanish of translating the passive voice (Lessons 7, 26, etc.), especially when the object or receiver of the action is an inanimate thing. The English past participle is changed to the tense of the verb *to be*, which is replaced by **se**, as :—

They sell wine here.

Wine is sold here.

They say the king has arrived.

They open the school at seven.

How do they call this in English?

This school was built last year.

} *Aquí se vende vino.*

Se dice que el rey ha llegado.

Se abre la escuela á las siete.

¿ Cómo se llama esto en inglés ?

Esta escuela se edificó el año pasado.

When the noun is plural the verb must likewise be plural. When the action falls on the subject the verb is called reflective. Such verbs, are conjugated in the usual way, but must have before each person the corresponding personal pronouns *myself, himself, ourselves, etc.*, which are the same as the dative (Lesson 9), excepting the 3rd persons, which are translated **se**, both singular and plural.

In the instances mentioned in Lesson 10 they are added to the verb, forming one word, as: *lavar*, to wash; *lavarse*, to wash oneself; *lavándose*, washing oneself; *lávese V.*, wash yourself. Nouns representing persons or things personified are preceded by **á** unless the objective case is clear without it, as :—

he visto una persona en la escalera.

VOCABULARY.

la intención, <i>the intention</i>	nadie, <i>nobody</i>
la aldea, <i>the village</i>	prudente, <i>prudent</i>
el panadero, <i>the baker</i>	todos los, las, <i>every</i> (pl.)
el informe, <i>the report</i>	solo, <i>alone, only</i>
la semana, <i>the week</i>	como, <i>as, like</i>
el par, <i>the pair</i>	actualmente, <i>at present</i>
el jamón, <i>the ham</i>	bastante, <i>fairly</i>
el almacén, <i>the warehouse</i>	siempre, <i>ever, always</i>
el acontecimiento, <i>the event</i>	tener * la intención, <i>to intend</i>
el comerciante, <i>the merchant</i>	ir *, <i>to go</i>
una vez, <i>once</i>	ir * á, <i>to be going to</i>
sordo, <i>deaf</i>	caer *, <i>to fall</i>
alguien, <i>somebody, anybody</i>	vender, <i>to sell</i>
prometer, <i>to promise</i>	creer, <i>to believe, think</i>
esconder, <i>to hide</i>	vivir, <i>to live</i>
decidir, <i>to decide</i>	someter, <i>to submit</i>
referirse *, <i>to refer</i>	entender *, <i>to understand</i>
preferir *, <i>to prefer</i>	corregir *, <i>to correct</i>

EXERCISE 12.

1. ¿ Niega V. haberlo hécho? 2. Sí, señor, lo niego.
3. ¿ Se los ha enseñado V.? 4. No, sr; voy á enseñárselos ahora.
5. ¿ Se me dará un articulo bueno? 6. Creo que sí.
7. ¿ No tiene V. nada á precio mas barato? 8. Sí, se lo mostraré á V.
9. Sirvase V. mandármelo. 10. Se lo mandaré por correo.
11. ¿ Quiere V. algo más, sr? 12. No; haga V. el favor de empaquetar estos artículos.
13. ¿ Qué tiene V. señor? 14. Los zapatos me aprieta.
15. ¿ Qué dice V.? 16. Digo que me he equivocado.
17. ¿ Digale V. que se siente? 18. Ya se lo he dicho.
19. Haga V. el favor de cerrar la puerta. 20. Voy á cerrarla inmediatamente.
21. ¿ No ha empezado V. el trabajo? 22. Todavía no lo he empezado.
23. Pues empiece V. en seguida. 24. Lo empezaré con mucho gusto.
25. ¿ Ha almorcizado V.? 26. No; no almorcamos hasta las doce (twelve).
27. ¿ Se la ha enviado V.? 28. Sí, se la envié ayer.
29. ¿ Qué quiere V. que le diga yo? 30. Digale que cierre la puerta.
31. ¿ Cuándo va V. á enseñármelo? 32. Se lo enseñaré ahora mismo (forthwith).
33. ¿ Qué excusa le da ella á V.? 34. Me da la excusa de haber estado ocupada.

35. ¿Qué debo decirle (tell him)? 36. Digale que me cambie este billete de banco.

37. ¿Tiene V. la factura de las mercancías? 38. Si, sr, la tengo aquí.

39. ¿Qué debe hacer nuestro amigo? 40. Debe mandármelos por vuelta de correo.

1. Do you like the climate of England? 2. I do not like it.

3. What do you need, sir? 4. I need paper to (para) parcel these articles.

5. Where do you want to send them? 6. I want to send them to my mother.

7. Will you sit down? 8. I do not want to sit down.

9. You must tell it to him. 10. I do not desire to tell it to him.

11. Tell him to come (that he come, subjunctive). 12. He says that he will (quiere) not come.

13. Is the price dear? 14. No, it is not very dear.

15. Please shut the door. 16. I will shut it at once.

17. What was she buying? 18. She was buying fruit.

19. When did you send it? 20. I sent it to her yesterday.

21. Would you accept it? 22. If she sent it to me I would accept it.

23. Have you sent him the invoice? 24. Yes, I have sent it to him to-day.

25. Will you (quiere V.) parcel these articles? 26. Yes, and I will send them to you.

27. What have you told him? 28. I have not written to him yet.

29. Tell him to sit (that he sit) down. 30. He does not wish to sit down.

31. Are you not mistaken? 32. I think not (Creo que no).

33. At what hour do you take lunch? 34. Generally at 11 o'clock (las once).

35. Have you sent it carriage paid? 36. Yes, I always pay the carriage.

37. What is the matter with her? 38. She is not well; she has the toothache

VOCABULARY.

el articulo, *the article*

el porte, *the carriage*

el precio, *the price*

la excusa, *the excuse*

las mercancias, *the goods*

el clima, *the climate*

Inglaterra, *England*

el banco, *the bank*

hasta, *until, up to*

vuelta de correo, *by return post*

generalmente, *generally*

almorzar *, *to lunch*

aceptar, *to accept*

negar *, *to deny*

mandar, *to send, order*

empaquetar, *to parcel*

la factura, <i>the invoice</i>	apretar *, <i>to squeeze, to pinch</i>
dolor de muelas, <i>toothache</i>	equivocarse, <i>to be mistaken</i>
que (conj.), <i>that</i>	sentarse *, <i>to sit down</i>
pues! <i>well!</i>	empezar *, <i>to begin</i>
¿qué tiene? <i>what is the matter?</i>	querer *, <i>to want, will</i>
dígale, <i>tell him, her</i>	julio, <i>July</i>
sírvase	agosto, <i>August</i>
haga el favor de } <i>please</i>	septiembre, <i>September</i>
creo que sí, <i>I think so</i>	octubre, <i>October</i>
creo que no, <i>I think not</i>	noviembre, <i>November</i>
nada, <i>nothing</i>	diciembre, <i>December</i>

LESSON 13.

VERBS REGULAR, RULE 1, 2ND AND 3RD CONJUGATIONS.

The 2nd regular conjugation is formed in a very similar manner to the first, the only difference being that in the indicative present the **a** of the termination is changed to **e**. In the subjunctive present and the imperative it is the opposite, viz. **e** is changed into **a**, as :—

Beber, to drink :

bebo	<i>I drink</i>	que beba	<i>that I drink</i>
bebes	<i>thou drinkest</i>	que bebas	<i>that thou drinkest</i>
bebe	{ <i>he, she drinks</i>	que beba	{ <i>that he, she drinks</i>
	<i>you drink</i>		<i>that you drink</i>
bebemos	<i>we drink</i>	que bebamos	<i>that we drink</i>
bebéis	<i>ye drink</i>	que bebáis	<i>that ye drink</i>
beben	{ <i>they drink</i>	que beban	{ <i>that they drink</i>
	<i>(you (pl.) drink</i>		<i>that you (pl.) drink</i>
bebe tú		drink thou	
beba V.		drink (you)	
que beba él, ella		let him, her drink	
bebamos		let us drink	
bebed		drink ye	
beban V.V.		drink (you) (pl.)	
que beban ellos, as		let them drink	

With the exception of two persons in the present indicative the terminations of the 3rd conjugation are in all tenses identical with the 2nd conjugation. The exceptions are the 1st and 2nd persons plural. Example :—

Partir, to depart :

parto	<i>I depart</i>	que parta	<i>that I depart</i>
partes	<i>thou departest</i>	que partas	<i>that thou departest</i>
parte	{ <i>he, she departs</i> <i>you depart</i>	que parta	{ <i>that he, she departs</i> <i>that you depart</i>
partimos	<i>we depart</i>	que partamos	<i>that we depart</i>
partis	<i>ye depart</i>	que partáis	<i>that ye depart</i>
parten	{ <i>they depart</i> <i>you (pl.) depart</i>	que partan	{ <i>that they depart</i> <i>that you (pl.) depart</i>
	parte tú		<i>depart thou</i>
	parta V.		<i>depart (you)</i>
	que parta él, ella		<i>let him, her depart</i>
	partamos		<i>let us depart</i>
	partid		<i>depart ye</i>
	que partan ellos, ellas		<i>let them depart</i>
	partan Vs.		<i>depart (you) (pl.)</i>

The present participles of the 2nd and 3rd conjugations are formed from the infinitive, in changing the terminations *er* and *ir* into *iendo*. The past participles are formed by changing the same terminations into *ido*.

Notice the irregularity in the translation of *with me*, etc., as :—

conmigo	contigo	consigo
<i>with me</i>	<i>with thee</i>	<i>with him (self)</i>
		<i>with you (sing.)</i>
con nosotros	con vosotros	consigo
<i>with us</i>	<i>with ye</i>	<i>with them (selves)</i>
		<i>with you (pl.)</i>

e.g. Lo he traído conmigo. *I have brought it with me.*

¿ Lleva V. dinero consigo ? *Do you carry any money with you ?*

This form means *with oneself*, etc. Notice particularly the difference in the following :—

Lo trae consigo. *He brings it with him.*

Viene con él. *He comes with him.*

Ir (to go) is quite irregular. The present indicative is formed thus : *voy, vas, va, vamos, vais, van*. The imperfect indicative : *iba, ibas, iba, íbamos, íbais, iban*.

Ir, followed by *a*, translates the English *to be going to* with an infinitive, viz. : *voy á escribir*, *I am going to write*.

Hacer, in Rule 1, has only the 1st person of the present indicative irregular, the same being **hago** instead of **hazo**. **Caer** and **traer** in like manner have **caigo** and **traigo** instead of **cao-trao**.

Verbs like these, having in the present indicative only the 1st person irregular, take the irregularity in *all* the persons of the present subjunctive.

The subjunctive present ends in **e**, 1st conjugation, and **a**, 2nd and 3rd conjugations, without exception.

EXERCISE 13.

1. ¿Qué le ha prometido V.? 2. No le he prometido nada.
3. ¿Ha visto V. á alguien? 4. No; no he visto á nadie.
5. ¿Se los ha sometido V.? 6. No; se los he enviado al comerciante.
7. ¿Se los ha prometido él á ella? 8. No; no quiere prometérselos.
9. ¿Quién se lo envió á V.? 10. El dependiente me lo ha enviado.
11. ¿Se lo ha dicho V. á ellos? 12. Sí, se lo dije (told, said) á ellos anteayer.
13. ¿Le han hablado Vds.? 14. Todavía no, porque no lo hemos creido prudente.
15. ¿Cuándo se lo dará V.? 16. Tengo la intención de dárselo mañana.
17. ¿Dónde vive ese hombre? 18. Vive en una aldea cerca de aquí.
19. ¿Quiere V. corregir mis ejercicios? 20. Sí, voy á corregirlos ahora.
21. ¿Le escribe V. todos los días? 22. No; sólo escribo una vez á la semana.
23. ¿Se los ha vendido él á V.? 24. No deseó vendérmelos.
25. ¿Los ha escondido el joven? 26. Sí, los esconde todos los días.
27. ¿Qué se ha decidido V. hacer? 28. Me he decidido hacer un viaje.
29. ¿Entiende V. lo que le digo (*I say*)? 30. No le entiendo muy bien.
31. ¿Qué quiere V. comer? 32. Yo comeré un poco de jamón.
33. ¿Á qué se refiere ella? 34. Ella se refiere al acontecimiento de ayer.
35. Prométaselos V. 36. No quiero prometérselos.
37. Que él (*let him*) se los prometa. 38. No quiere prometérmelos.
39. ¿Para cuándo se lo han prometido? 40. Lo han prometido para mañana.

1. Which bread do you prefer? 2. I prefer French bread.
3. Do you not like Spanish bread? 4. Yes, pretty well, but not so much (*no tanto*) as the French.
5. Where is our friend the baker? 6. He has gone (*entrar*) in that warehouse.
7. What have you promised her? 8. I have promised her a hat and a pair of gloves.
9. When did you buy them? 10. I bought them yesterday.
11. Have you had the other book? 12. No; I have not had it to-day.
13. Where do you live now? 14. At present I live in Paris.

15. Has he sent his report? 16. Yes, he sent it to me last week (*la semana pasada*).
 17. Which do you like most? 18. I like this the most.
 19. How are your parents to-day? 20. I am sorry (*siento*) to tell you that they are not well.
 21. Why do you shout so (*de esa manera*)? 22. Because she is rather (*algo*) deaf.
 23. When will you give it to me? 24. I will give it to you to-morrow.
 25. Has he hidden them? 26. Yes, he is always hiding them.
 27. Promise it to her. 28. No, I won't (*no quiero*) promise it to her.
 29. Have you submitted it to him? 30. Yes, I submitted them to him yesterday.
 31. Will (*quiere*) you give it to me? 32. Yes, I will give it to you the day after to-morrow.
 33. What have you said to her? 34. I have said she must go.
 35. What do you intend to do? 36. I do not know yet.
 37. How many (*cuántos*) have you bought? 38. I have only bought one.

LESSON 14.

We mentioned in Lesson 9 that there are only three verbs in the Spanish language which have the imperfect indicative irregular, viz. *ir, iba*; *ser, era*; *ver, veía*. This tense in the 2nd and 3rd conjugations ends in **ia**, as: *beber, bebía*; *comer, comía*; *haber, había*; *partir, partía*; *escribir, escribía*. The only verbs with irregular past participles are: *decir, dicho*; *morir, muerto*; *matar, matado*, *muerto*; *abrir, abierto*; *ver, visto*; *escribir, escrito*; *cubrir, cubierto*; *poner, puesto*; *hacer, hecho*; *romper, roto*; and verbs ending in **olver**, which have **uelto**, as *volver, vuelto*, etc.

The second class of irregular verbs varies only in the same persons and tenses as in the first class (Lesson 12), and the irregularity is that of changing the **o** of the root into **ue**, as: *mostrar, muestro*, I show; *que muestre* (subjunctive), that I show; *muestre V.*, show (you).

Poder, in Rule 1, has this same irregularity,

“POR” AND “PARA”.

Por and **para** both translate the English *for*, but they cannot be used indiscriminately.

Para is used when destination of the object (or thing) is implied, as:—

La carta es para un amigo.
The letter is for a friend.

Por is used when destination of the subject (or nominative) is denoted, as :—

El hombre ha venido por un libro.

The man has come for a book.

Therefore **por** is used when the “thing” or object mentioned is passive, and **para** when it is active, i.e. in course of transmission, or destined or intended to reach somebody.

In all other cases use **por**.

Ir por dinero.

To go for money.

El criado ha ido por pan.

The servant has gone for bread.

Enviar por (or á buscar) el vi-
driero.

To send for the glazier.

Le doy esto por aquello.

I give you this for that.

Cambié mi pañuelo por el suyo.

I exchanged my handkerchief for his.

Escribo esto por Juán.

I write this for (in place of) John.

Escribo esto para Juán.

I write this for (to go to) John.

Murieron por su patria.

They died for their country.

Abogué por él.

I pleaded for him.

Hable V. á su padre por mi her-
mano.

*Speak to your father for (in favour
of) my brother.*

For, meaning “because,” is translated **porque**.

By is translated **por** when referring to physical actions and de
when mental, as :—

Esto fué hecho por Juán. *This was made by John.*

Juán es amado de su madre. *John is loved by his mother.*

See idioms of **por** and **para** (Lesson 36).

Lo is used to translate, *what, that which, what is, that which is*,
as :—

Lo mio no es suyo. *What is mine is not his.*

Lo nuestro es nuestro y no suyo. *What is ours is ours and not theirs.*

See Lesson 44.

VOCABULARY.

la tarjeta postal, *the postcard*

el mes, *the month*

el papel para escribir, *writing-paper*

la biblioteca, *the library*

el fieltro, *the felt*

la verdad, *the truth*

los géneros, *the goods*

la cerveza, *the beer*

la pena, *the trouble, pain*

el anciano, *the old man*

el carpintero, *the carpenter*

la limosna, *the alms*

la silla, *the chair*

la persona, *the person*

de nuevo, <i>new, fresh news</i>	beber, <i>to drink</i>
hágalo V. de nuevo, <i>do it again</i>	partir, <i>to depart</i>
francamente, <i>frankly</i>	merecer *, <i>to merit</i>
¿ por qué ? <i>for what ?</i>	mencionarse, <i>to be mentioned</i>
¿ porqué ? <i>why ?</i>	preguntar, <i>to ask (questions)</i>
¿ cuánto ? <i>how much ?</i>	pedir *, <i>to ask for</i>
pronto, <i>soon</i>	complacer * á, <i>to please</i>
ver *, <i>to see</i>	prestar *, <i>to lend</i>
saludar, <i>to salute</i>	dicir *, <i>to tell, say</i>
viajar, <i>to travel</i>	sentir *, <i>to feel</i>
pensar *, <i>to think</i>	poder *, <i>to can, may, to be able</i>

EXERCISE 14.

1. ¿ Para qué quiere V. salir ? 2. Para comprar papel para escribir, y unas tarjetas postales.
 3. ¿ Porque ha venido V. ? 4. Porque quiero ver á mi amigo Pablo.
 5. ¿ Dónde está su sombrero de fieltro ? 6. Lo he cambiado por esto.
 7. ¿ Por quién hablaba él ? 8. Hablaba por el pobre anciano para quien pedía una limosna.
 9. ¿ Por qué ha enviado V. el criado ? 10. Le he enviado por pan francés.
 11. ¿ Para dónde parte V. ? 12. Parto para Nueva York.
 13. ¿ Ha escrito él la carta para su padre ? 14. Todavía no la ha escrito.
 15. ¿ Qué ha hecho el sastre ? 16. Ha hecho un traje para mi hermano.
 17. ¿ Por cuánto vendió él los géneros ? 18. Los vendió por trescientas libras (£300).
 19. ¿ Quiere V. escribir la carta por el dependiente ? 20. Ha dicho que la escribiría él mismo.
 21. ¿ Para quién es este dinero ? 22. Es para el Sr Martin.
 23. Aquí hay una carta para Vd. 24. Gracias, démela Vd.
 25. ¿ Qué hay de nuevo ? 26. No hay nada que merece la pena de mencionarse.
 27. ¿ Cuánto pide V. (ask) por esto ? 28. No quiero venderlo.
 29. ¿ Por quién fué (was) enviado este libro ? 30. Fué enviado por mi hermana.
 31. ¿ Para quién desea ella el dinero ? 32. Lo desea para un pobre mendigo.
 33. ¿ Por quién ha sido hecha esta silla ? 34. Fué hecha por el carpintero.
 35. Todavía no he estudiado estas lecciones. 36. Pues, estúdielas para complacer á su maestro.

37. ¿ Por cuánto tiempo le ha prestado V. el dinero ? 38. Se lo he prestado por dos meses.

39. ¿ Por cuánto ha vendido él su biblioteca ? 40. La ha vendido por mil libras (£1000).

1. Have you given him your French Grammar ? 2. Yes, I have given it to him for this Spanish book.

3. When do you start (salir) ? 4. I start to-morrow for Madrid.

5. What do you think of it ? 6. To (para) speak frankly it does not please me.

7. Why did you not ask your friend ? 8. Well, to speak the truth, I have not seen him.

9. Why do you salute that person ? 10. Because he is a friend of my father.

11. For whom is this parcel ? 12. It is for the French gentleman.

13. What did you go into that shop for ? 14. To buy some writing-paper.

15. This is for the Germans. 16. Well, can you not send it to them ?

17. How much do you ask (pide V.) for this pen ? 18. I ask five (cinco) shillings.

19. Can you change this bank-note ? 20. I am sorry I cannot change it.

21. Why do you do that ? 22. I do it to please my friend.

23. Why has the boy come ? 24. Because his father has sent him.

25. Why does he not go ? 26. He wants to stay here (quedarse).

27. Have you spoken for him ? 28. No ; but I shall speak for him to-day.

29. What was he drinking ? 30. He was drinking red wine (vino tinto).

31. Do you want beer or water ? 32. I like to drink water.

33. Has he hidden the books ? 34. Yes, but he has promised to find them.

35. What was he saying ? 36. He was saying that he would like to travel.

37. Is he going to travel ? 38. I do not think so.

39. To what do you refer ? 40. I refer to the letter you wrote yesterday.

LESSON 15.

VERBS, 2ND AND 3RD CONJUGATION—RULE 3.

The terminations of the past definite of the 2nd and 3rd conjugations are identical, and they are very similar to those of the 1st conjugation, being **i**, **iste**, **ió**, **imos**, **isteis**, **ieron**. Examples :—

Comer : comí	Partir : parti
comiste	partiste
comió	partió
comimos	partimos
comisteis	partisteis
comieron	partieron

The last person gives always the imperfect subjunctive, as shown in Lesson 10.

The future and conditional indicative (Rule 4) are formed exactly as the 1st conjugation, by adding to the infinitive the same terminations as shown in Lesson 11, viz. :—

Comeré, comerás, comerá, comeremos, comeréis, comerán,
I shall eat, etc.

Comería, comerías, comería, comeríamos, comeríais, comerian,
I should eat, etc.

Verbs (infinitives) following others implying motion *to* or *from* a place are preceded by **á**, as :—

Piensa ir á visitarlos. *He thinks of going to visit them.*
Vaya V. á buscarle. *Go and find him.*

The verbs **poner** and **salir** in Rule 1 are irregular only in the *first* person of the present indicative, from which is formed always the present subjunctive and the imperative. See rule (Lesson 13) regarding such verbs.

Dar (*to give*) takes irregularly in Rule 3 (past definite, etc.) the terminations of the second conjugation, **di**, **diste**, **dió**, **dimos**, **disteis**, **dieron**. See list of irregular verbs at the end of the book.

The days of the week are as follows, commencing with Sunday : **Domingo**, **lunes**, **martes**, **miércoles**, **jueves**, **viernes**, **sábado**. They are preceded by the definite article masculine : *le veré el lunes*, I will see you on Monday. In the plural only the article is changed, except in **domingo** and **sábado**, to which **s** is added, e.g. :—

Viene todos los lunes. *He comes every Monday.*
Viene todos los sábados. *He comes every Saturday.*

VOCABULARY.

el caso, *the case, instance*

el dibujo, *the sketch, design*

el andén, *the platform (railway)*

el principal, *the principal*

el alma (f.), *the soul*

el sonido, *the sound*

el fósforo, *the match*

el permiso, *the permission*

el mal, *the evil, wrong*
 el orario (de trenes), *the time-table*
 la cosa, *the thing*
 la vacación, *the holiday, vacation*
 la lumbre, *the fire*
 la importancia, *the importance*
 la aprobación, *the approbation*
 la galeria, *the gallery*
 la pintura, *the picture*
 extraordinario, *extraordinary*
 en vez de } instead of
 en lugar de }
 junto, *near, close to*
 gracias, *thanks*
 detenidamente, *cautiously, attentively*
 unos cuantos, *a few*
 temprano, *early*
 ¿ qué pasa ? *what is going on ?*
 especial, *special*
 de buena gana, *willingly*
 perder *, *to lose*

visitar, *to visit*
 pertenecer *, *to belong*
 encender *, *to light*
 suceder, *to happen*
 soler *, *to be accustomed (wont)*
 pasar, *to pass*
 tomar los baños, *to take the waters*
 escoger, *to select*
 dejar, *to leave, cease, let*
 permitir, *to permit*
 proteger, *to protect*
 ocurrir, *to occur*
 evitar, *to avoid*
 resultar, *to result*
 poner *, *to put*
 repartir, *to divide*
 examinar, *to examine*
 prohibir, *to prohibit*
 entremeterse, *to meddle*
 recibir, *to receive*

EXERCISE 15.

1. ¿ Qué pasa ? 2. No es cosa de importancia.
3. ¿ Á dónde suelen Vs. ir para pasar su vacación ? 4. Solemos ir á la mar (á tomar los baños).
5. ¿ Han escogido ellos los dibujos que desean ? 6. Van (están) escogiéndolos ahora.
7. ¿ Qué quiere V., señor ? 8. Quiero dejar estas cosas para el Sr. Cordeiro.
9. ¿ Se permite pasar al andén ? 10. No se permite sin pagar el billete de andén.
11. ¿ Á quién protege el principal ? 12. Protege siempre á ese joven que ha visto V.
13. ¿ Qué ha ocurrido ? 14. No es nada de extraordinario.
15. ¿ Porqué dice V. " el " alma en vez de " la " alma ? 16. Para evitar el mal sonido que resultaría de poner dos aes juntas.
17. ¿ Se hace esto siempre ? 18. No ; solo sucede en el singular en algunos casos especiales (Lesson 4).
19. ¿ Me los trae Vd. ? 20. Si, pero son para sus padres de V.
21. ¿ Le ha visto V. ? 22. Si, le veo todos los días.

23. ¿ Aquí le traigo á V. las muestras? 24. Gracias; las examinaré detenidamente.

25. ¿ Se los sometió él á V.? 26. No; todavía no me los ha sometido.

27. ¿ Encendió él la lumbre? 28. No; fué (*it was*) la criada que la encendió.

29. ¿ A quién pertenecía la casa? 30. Pertenecía al maestro de escuela.

31. ¿ Repartieron ellos el dinero? 32. Si, lo repartieron entre los pobres.

33. ¿ Quién le prohibió eso? 34. Se lo prohibió su padre.

35. ¿ Le prometió V. algo? 36. Sí; le prometí llevarle al teatro.

37. No se entremeta V. en estas cosas. 38. No quiero entremeterme en ellas.

39. ¿ No mereció él su aprobación? 40. No; no la mereció porque había hecho mal.

41. ¿ Ha llamado V., Sr? 42. Sí, ponga unos cuantos fósforos en mi cuarto.

43. ¿ Recibió V. mi carta? 44. Sí, la recibí en Madrid.

45. ¿ La escribió V.? 46. No; mi dependiente la escribió.

1. Where did you break (*interrumpir*) the journey? 2. We broke the journey at Bordeaux.

3. What weight did they permit free (*gratis*)? 4. They permitted us 30 (*treinta*) kilos.

5. What is the name of this station? 6. It is called the North Station.

7. Did he lose the ticket? 8. No, he did not lose it.

9. Did you write to your brother? 10. No; but I wrote to my sister.

11. Did he write his exercises? 12. No; he had not time to write them.

13. Does he receive many letters? 14. Yes, he receives some each (*cada*) day.

15. Do you read the newspapers? 16. I read them every day.

17. Do they write to you in Spanish or in English? 18. They always write me in Spanish.

19. What were they selling? 20. They were selling cigars (*cigarros*).

21. What did they sell? 22. They did not sell anything but pictures.

23. Where do you put them? 24. I put them in the warehouse.

25. Did you leave the church early? 26. We did not leave early.

27. Do you leave home early? 28. I leave at eight o'clock (*á las ocho*).

29. If I bought them would you accept them? 30. I would accept them willingly.

31. Where did you dine yesterday. 32. We dined at the Royal Hotel.

33. Where did they examine the luggage? 34. They examined it at Paris.

35. When did you visit them? 36. The day before yesterday.

37. When did they receive the goods ? 38. They received them last (*pasado*) week.
 39. Did you give them to them ? 40. No, but she promised to do so.
 41. When did they give them to you ? 42. They gave them to me a few days ago (*hace algunos días*).

LESSON 16.

The Spaniards use two verbs for the English *to know*, viz. : **saber**, *to know how* ; and **conocer**, *to be acquainted with*. The first is used for what is learned by heart, and the second for persons and things personified, meaning to know by the senses of seeing, hearing, etc. **Saber** is irregular in Rules 1, 3, and 4. **Conocer** is irregular only in the 1st person present indicative, and in those tenses formed from same, viz., present subjunctive and imperative (Lesson 13).

Before persons and things personified put **á**, as :—

¿ Ha visto V. á Juán ? *Have you seen John ?*

Examples of saber and conocer :—

¿ Conoce V. á alguien que sepa el español ?	<i>Do you know anyone who speaks Spanish ?</i>
¿ Sabe V. nadar ?	<i>Do you know how to swim ?</i>
¿ Sabe V. quien pasó por aquí ayer ?	<i>Do you know who passed here yesterday ?</i>
¿ Saben ellos su lección ?	<i>Do they know their lesson ?</i>
No sé	<i>I do not know.</i>
Conozco } Ya sé } que he hecho mal	<i>I know I have done wrong.</i>
¿ Sabe V. quién le conoce ?	<i>Do you know who is acquainted with him ?</i>
No sé (no lo sé)	<i>I do not know.</i>
¿ Le conoce ella ?	<i>Does she know you ?</i>
¿ Sabe V. el español ?	<i>Do you know Spanish ?</i>
¿ Conoce V. al francés ?	<i>Can you speak French ?</i>
¿ Saben ellos que vamos á España ?	<i>Do they know we are going to Spain ?</i>

Notice the translation of *would like*, viz. :—

yo, él, ella, Vd., quisiera
nosotros (as), quisiéramos
ellos, ellas (Vds.) quisieran

*I he, she, you would like
we would (should) like
they (you (pl.)) would like*

Past participles with **haber** remain invariable, but with all other verbs they change to show gender and number, as :—

El hombre se ha vestido	}	<i>The man (woman) has dressed him (her) self.</i>
La mujer " "		
El muchacho está vestido.		<i>The boy is dressed.</i>
La niña está vestida		<i>The girl is dressed.</i>

VOCABULARY.

la correspondencia, <i>the correspondence</i>	manchado, <i>stained</i>
la noche, <i>the night</i>	á bordo de, <i>on board, alongside</i>
el sitio, <i>the place</i>	no sé, <i>I do not know</i>
la corriente, <i>the current</i>	quisiera, <i>I should like</i>
el aire, <i>the air</i>	mientras, <i>whilst</i>
una corriente de aire, <i>a draught</i>	viejo, <i>old</i>
el vapor, <i>the steam, steamer</i>	ya, <i>already</i>
el lanchero, <i>the boatman</i>	seguro, <i>sure</i>
el extranjero, <i>the foreigner</i>	conocer *, <i>to be acquainted with</i>
el extranjero, <i>abroad</i>	parecer *, <i>to seem, appear</i>
el gerente, <i>the manager</i>	aclarar, <i>to clear up</i>
el país, <i>the country</i>	recoger, <i>to gather</i>
el placer, <i>the pleasure</i>	salir *, <i>to leave, start</i>
la flor, <i>the flower</i>	saber *, <i>to know (how)</i>
el médico, <i>the doctor</i>	venir *, <i>to come</i>
el cuchillo, <i>the knife</i>	nadar, <i>to swim</i>
en casa, <i>at home</i>	encontrar *, <i>to meet, find</i>
el diccionario, <i>the dictionary</i>	probar *, <i>to prove</i>
la dirección, <i>the direction, address</i>	traducir *, <i>to translate</i>
el verbo, <i>the verb</i>	acabar de, <i>to have just</i>
imposible, <i>impossible</i>	conjugar, <i>to conjugate</i>
duro, <i>hard</i>	tampoco, <i>neither, either (neg.)</i>

EXERCISE 16.

1. ¿ Hasta qué hora se recoje la correspondencia para Inglaterra ?
2. Hasta las nueve de la noche.
3. ¿ Porqué no le gusta estar en este sitio ? 4. Porque hay una corriente de aire.
5. ¿ Qué clase de lápiz quiere V. ? 6. Quiero un lápiz duro.
7. ¿ Porqué no quiso V. (*would you not*) comprar el libro ? 8. Porque me pareció estar manchado.
9. ¿ Vió V. partir el vapor ? 10. Sí, lo vi partir ; el lanchero me llevó á bordo.

11. ¿ Está en casa el señor Carrera ? 12. No ; salió á las ocho y media.
 13. ¿ Conoce V. á aquel extranjero ? 14. Si, le conozco bastante bien.
 15. ¿ Sabe V. el español ? 16. No ; pero lo aprendo ahora.
 17. ¿ Cuándo viene su hermano ? 18. No sé ; pero creo que viene mañana.
19. Tráigame V. el libro. 20. No puedo traérselo ; estoy ocupado.
 21. ¿ Quisiera V. ir á España ? 22. Si, lo quisiera mucho, pero me es imposible.
23. ¿ Sabe ella nadar ? 24. Sí, aprendió mientras estaba en Francia.
 25. ¿ Á quién quisiera V. ver ? 26. Quisiera ver al gerente.
 27. ¿ Dónde le encuentra V. ? 28. Le encuentro en la calle del mercado.
 29. ¿ Cómo se va á probar esto ? 30. No se puede probarlo.
 31. ¿ Ha traído V. mi traje ? 32. No lo he traído, ni los zapatos tampoco.
 33. Yo no sé hacerlo. 34. Ni yo tampoco.
 35. ¿ Puede V. traducirme esto ? 36. Lo traduciré con mucho placer.
 37. ¿ Conoce V. á alguien que sabe el español ? 38. Sí, tengo un amigo que lo sabe.
 39. ¿ Quiere V. mostrarle su libro ? 40. Ya se lo he mostrado.
 41. ¿ Cómo vamos á aclarar esto ? 42. Eso es lo que no puedo decírselo.
 43. ¿ De qué país es V. ? 44. Soy español, hijo de Andalucía.
1. Do you see that beautiful flower ? 2. Yes, I see it very well.
 3. What news do you bring from home ? 4. There is nothing fresh.
 5. Have you seen my parents ? 6. Yes, I saw them yesterday.
 7. For whom is the letter ? 8. It is for the doctor.
 9. When do you leave for London ? 10. I am going to leave to-day.
 11. Will you write this letter for (instead of) the clerk ? 12. With pleasure ; for whom is it ?
 13. For how much did you sell your house ? 14. I sold it for £500 (*quinientas libras*).
 15. What did he give you for your knife ? 16. He gave me his old dictionary for it (*el*lo).
 17. What were you showing him ? 18. I was showing him my new handkerchiefs.
 19. Please shut the door. 20. I have already shut it.
 21. Do you know your lesson well ? 22. Yes, I know it very well.
 23. Does your father know that I am here ? 24. Yes, I have just told him (it to him).
 25. Do they know when we shall arrive ? 26. Yes, I told them of it (it to them').
 27. Does she know your father's address in Spain ? 28. Yes, I have given it to her.

29. Do you know that it is raining (*llueve*) ? 30. No, I did not know it.
 31. Do you know (how) to conjugate the verbs ? 32. I am not sure, but I study them every day.
 33. How do you know that ? 34. Because he has written me.
 35. Do you know Spain ? 36. Not very well, I have only been once (*una vez*).
 37. Has this work been translated into Spanish ? 38. I do not think so (*creo que no*).
 39. Do you know that lady ? 40. Yes, that lady is my aunt.

LESSON 17.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

The possessive pronouns are : **mio**, *my* ; **tuyo**, *thy* ; **suyo**, *his, hers, its, yours, theirs* ; **nuestro**, *our* ; **vuestro**, *yours* (plural of *thou*) ; the first three of which are contracted when coming before the noun. The student must notice carefully the use of these pronouns, which is as follows :—

RULE 1, BEFORE NOUNS.

Masculine or Feminine.

	SING.	PLUR.	SING.	PLUR.
<i>my</i>	mi	mis	mio-a	mios-as
<i>thy</i>	tu	tus	tuyo-a	tuyos-as
<i>his, her, yours</i>	su	sus	suyo-a	suyos-as
<i>our</i>	nuestro-a	nuestros-as	nuestro-a	nuestros-as
<i>your</i>	vuestro-a	vuestros-as	vuestro-a	vuestros-as
<i>their, your(pl.)</i>	su	sus	suyo-a	suyos-as

RULE 2, FOLLOWING THE NOUN.

RULE 3, INSTEAD OF A NOUN.

Masculine.

SING.	PLUR.
el mio	los mios
el tuyo	los tuyos
el suyo	los suyos
el nuestro	los nuestros
el vuestro	los vuestros
el suyo	los suyos

Feminine.

SING.	PLUR.
la mia	las mias
la tuya	las tuyas
la suya	las suyas
la nuestra	las nuestras
la vuestra	las vuestras
la suya	las suyas

Examples :—

RULE 1 :—

mi sombrero	<i>my hat</i>	mi pluma	<i>my pen</i>
	<i>his</i>		<i>his</i>
su sombrero	<i>her } hat</i>	su pluma	<i>her } pen</i>
	<i>your</i>		<i>your</i>

nuestro lápiz	<i>our pencil</i>	nuestra visita	<i>our visit</i>
su alfiler	<i>their pin</i>	su diversión	<i>their amusement</i>
	<i>your (pl.)</i>		<i>your</i>

PLUR.

mis sombreros	<i>my hats</i>	mis plumas	<i>my feathers</i>
sus sombreros	<i>their hats</i>	sus plumas	<i>their feathers</i>
nuestros lápices	<i>our pencils</i>	nuestras visitas	<i>our visits</i>
sus alfileres	<i>their pins</i>	sus diversiones	<i>their amusements</i>

RULE 2 :—

Es libro mio ; no es libro suyo. *It is a book of mine ; it is not a book of his.*

No es amigo mio.

He is not my friend.

Queridos amigos mios.

My dear friends.

No es sombrero suyo.

It is not their hat.

RULES 1 and 3 :—

¿ Por qué ha cambiado él su libro ? Por el mio.

¿ Quiere V. vivir en nuestra casa ? No ; quiero vivir en la mia.

¿ Cuyo es el libro que necesita V. ? Necesito el mio.

¿ De quién son estos periódicos ? Son los nuestros.

¿ Va V. á mi despacho ? No ; voy al suyo (de él)

Á cuyas felicitaciones unimos la nuestra.

Observation : as **suyo** and its contraction **su** refer to several persons (par. 1), the disjunctives (Lessons 9, 10) are put after the noun, where necessary to avoid ambiguity, or the article may replace the pronoun, as :—

el primo de él, ella, de V., de ellos, *his, her, your, their cousin.*

After **ser** the indefinite article is very often omitted, as :—

es dependiente, *he is a clerk.* See Lesson 4.

Parts of the body, and of dress, have the definite article instead of the possessive pronoun, as :—

¿ Qué tiene V. en la mano ? *What have you in your hand ?*

VOCABULARY.

el alfiler, *the pin*

la opinión, *the opinion*

la faja, *the sash*

el pariente, *the relation*

la traducción, *the translation*

el asunto, *the matter, the affair*

la disculpa, *the excuse*

la tía, *the aunt*

la fábrica, *the factory*

el primo, *the cousin*

la equivocación, *the mistake*

el caballo, *the horse*

el abanico, *the fan*

propio, *proper, own*

cuyo, *whose*
 oscuro, *obscure, dark*
 tan—como, *as* }—*as so*
 fino, *fine* (in texture)
 íntimo, *intimate*

Pablo, *Paul*
 Fernando, *Ferdinand*
 distinguir, *to distinguish*
 tener * éxito, *to be successful*
 salir * bien, *to turn out well*
 escuchar, *to listen*

EXERCISE 17.

1. ¿ Cuyo es el libro que tiene V. ? 2. Tengo el mio propio.
3. ¿ Quiere él mis libros ? 4. No, señor ; quiere los suyos.
5. ¿ Necesita mis alfileres esa Sra. ? 6. No ; solo necesita los suyos.
7. ¿ Necesitan ellos un libro ? 8. Si, necesitan el mio.
9. ¿ Quién quiere mi faja ? 10. Nadie quiere su faja de V.
11. ¿ De quién es esta traducción ? 12. No sé ; no es traducción nuestra.
13. ¿ Es amigo de V. ese hombre ? 14. No señor ; no es amigo mio.
15. ¿ Dónde están mis pañuelos ? 16. Los suyos y los de su hermano están en la cómoda.
17. ¿ Es oscuro su cuarto de él ? 18. No es tan oscuro como el mio.
19. ¿ Qué dice el gerente ? 20. Dice que no acepta sus disculpas.
21. ¿ Cuál le gusta á V. más, el de V., ó el nuestro ? 22. Me gusta más el de V.
23. ¿ Es esa su fábrica de V. ? 24. No ; es la fábrica de nuestro amigo.
25. ¿ Quién ha hecho esta equivocación ? 26. No sé ; no es equivocación mia.
27. ¿ Es de él este almacén ? 28. No es de él ; es mio.
29. ¿ Tiene ella mi abanico ? 30. No tiene el de V. ; tiene el suyo propio.
31. ¿ Son finos los pañuelos de V. ? 32. Si, bastante finos, pero no más finos que los suyos.
33. ¿ Qué dice V. ? 34. Digo que su tio de él y el nuestro son amigos íntimos.
35. ¿ De quién es este tabaco ? 36. Es de mi hermano.
37. ¿ Hay muchas faltas en los temas ? 38. En el de V. y el de mi hermano no hay muchas faltas.

1. Whose letters are these ? 2. This letter is ours, that one yours, and the others are your father's.
3. Has he written his exercises ? 4. Yes, and he is helping John to do his.
5. Can you distinguish yours from his ? 6. Yes, I can distinguish what is mine from what is his.
7. Have you your books ? 8. John has his own book, Paul has mine, and I have yours.

9. He says these are his flowers. 10. They are our flowers and not his.
 11. Who is that young man? 12. He is a relation of mine.
 13. Whose handkerchiefs has he? 14. He has his own, yours, and hers.
 15. Has he been successful in his purchases? 16. Yes, his purchases have turned out well.
 17. Whose are these? 18. The white one is mine and the black one is Ferdinand's.
 19. Is that man a friend of yours? 20. No; he is no friend of mine.
 21. Have you my handkerchiefs? 22. No; I have only my own.
 23. Who are those ladies and gentlemen? 24. They are my aunts and cousins.
 25. Is that horse as good as yours? 26. I think it is not so good as mine.
 27. Is this room as dark as theirs? 28. No; but it is as dark as ours.
 29. Has she taken my watch? 30. Yes; she has yours and his.
 31. Is this grammar as good as his? 32. It is better than his but not so good as mine.
 33. Are your pens good? 34. They are not so good as yours.
 35. Do you like yours or his? 36. I like mine the most.
 37. What is his opinion? 38. I do not know, but mine is that we must listen.

LESSON 18.

COMPARATIVES.

To translate the comparatives of equality the Spaniards use the words **tan . . . como**, meaning *as (or so) . . . as*, e.g.:—

Es tan rico como V. *He is as rich as you.*

El cuarto es tan oscuro como este. *The room is as dark as this.*

Referring to numbers or quantity, the **tan** is written in full, **tanto**, viz. :—

Tengo tanto dinero como ellos. *I have as much money as they.*

Tendrá V. tantos amigos como quiera. *You will have as many friends as you wish.*

The comparative of superiority is translated **más . . . que**, and of inferiority, **menos . . . que**, as :—

Es más alto que V. *He is taller than you.*

Es más hermosa que su hermana. *She is prettier than her sister.*

Este libro es más pequeño que el de V. *This book is smaller than yours.*

Es menos aplicado que su hermano. *He is less diligent than his brother.*

None of the comparatives change to indicate gender or number, and the words **mayor**, **menor**, **mejor**, **peor**, being really comparatives do not require **más** or **menos** before them.

Than is always translated **que**, unless it refers to quantity or precedes the pronoun *what* (*lo que*), in which case it is **de**, viz. :—

El tiene más de 50 libros. *He has more than 50 books.*

Más de lo que esperaba. *More than I expected.*

With numbers or quantity negatively **que** is often used :—

No tenía más que dos hijos. *{ He had not more than 2 sons.
He had only 2 sons.*

Larger and *smaller* have two forms, one regular and the other irregular. *Good* and *bad* are irregular. Compare :—

grande, *large*; más grande, or mayor, *larger*;
el (la) más grande, *the largest*.

pequeño, *small*; más pequeño or menor, *smaller*;
el más pequeño, *the smallest*.

bueno, *good*; mejor, *better*; el (la) mejor, *the best*.
malo, *bad*; peor, *worse*; el (la) peor, *the worst*.

Applied to persons **mayor** means *older*, **menor**, *younger*.

Examples :—

Mi casa es más grande que la suya.

My house is larger than his.

Mi casa es grande, pero la de V. es mayor que la mía.

My house is large but yours is larger than mine.

Este hombre es malo, pero su hermano es peor que él.

This man is bad, but his brother is worse than he.

El es el más amable de todos.

He is the most amiable of all.

When an adverb accompanies an adjective both follow the noun, as :—

Es el hombre el más alto de la aldea.

He is the tallest man in the village.

The more . . . the more is in Spanish **cuanto más . . . tanto más**, viz. :—

Cuanto más estudia, tanto más aprende.

The more he studies the more he learns.

The more . . . the less is similarly **cuanto más . . . tanto menos**, as :—

Cuanto más juega tanto menos estudia.

The more he plays the less he studies.

VOCABULARY.

el ayuntamiento, <i>the town-hall</i>	tarde, <i>late</i>
el discípulo, <i>the pupil</i>	tan, <i>as</i>
el estudiante, <i>the student</i>	tanto, <i>as much</i>
la empresa, <i>the undertaking</i>	mejor, <i>better</i>
el peso, <i>the dollar</i>	peor, <i>worse</i>
el caballero, <i>the gentleman</i>	mayor, <i>greater, elder</i>
el hijo, <i>the son</i>	mercantil, <i>mercantile</i>
el vecino, <i>the neighbour</i>	menor, <i>smaller, younger</i>
el italiano, <i>the Italian</i>	ancho, <i>broad</i>
el soldado, <i>the soldier</i>	querer *, <i>to want, will</i>
la muchacha, <i>the girl</i>	leer, <i>to read</i>
la vara, <i>the yard (Spanish)</i>	trabajar, <i>to work</i>
diez, <i>ten</i>	valer *, <i>to be worth</i>
antes, <i>before</i>	¿ cuánto vale ? <i>what is the price ?</i>
á menudo, <i>often</i>	aburrirse, <i>to be weary (downcast)</i>
dos, <i>two</i>	la mayor parte, <i>the most</i>
amable, <i>amiable</i>	este, <i>the latter</i>
más pronto, <i>quicker</i>	aquel, <i>the former</i>
menos, <i>less</i>	figurarse, <i>to imagine</i>

EXERCISE 18.

1. ¿ Cuál edificio es el más grande de esta ciudad ? 2. El ayuntamiento es el más grande y el más hermoso.
3. ¿ Es difícil esta lección ? 4. Si, es una de las más difíciles.
5. ¿ Cuál de los discípulos es el más aplicado ? 6. Jaime (*James*) es el más aplicado.
7. ¿ Es grande la escuela mercantil ? 8. Es más grande que todas las otras.
9. ¿ Es él menos alto que su hermano ? 10. No ; es más alto que él.
11. ¿ Es su primo tan rico como V. ? 12. Es más rico que yo.
13. ¿ Tiene ella bastante papel para escribir ? 14. Si, tiene tanto papel como necesita.
15. ¿ Trabaja V. tan tarde como yo ? 16. Creo que trabajo más tarde que V.
17. ¿ Es más grande la gramática francesa que la española ? 18. No ; esta es más grande que aquella.

19. ¿ Habla V. el español tan bien como lo escribe ? 20. No lo hablo tan bien como lo escribo.

21. ¿ Tienen ellos tanto dinero como nosotros ? 22. Tienen más dinero que nosotros.

23. ¿ Son estos discípulos menos aplicados que los de V. ? 24. No ; creo que son más aplicados que los míos.

25. ¿ Sabe V. esta lección tan bien como su hermano ? 26. La sé mejor que él.

27. ¿ Cuál es el peor ? 28. No sé cual es el peor.

29. ¿ Es ella mayor que su hermano ? 30. No señor ; es menor que él.

31. ¿ Cuál es el más aplicado de esos estudiantes ? 32. El menor es el más aplicado de todos.

33. ¿ Cuántos pesos tiene V. ? 34. No tengo más que diez.

35. ¿ Está enferma esa señora ? 36. Está cansada más bien (*rather*) que enferma.

37. ¿ Le ha prestado á V. tanto como le pidió ? 38. No me prestó tanto como quería yo.

39. ¿ Tiene el caballero más caballos que antes ? 40. No ; tiene menos de los que tenía.

41. ¿ Cuánto vale esta tela ? 42. Vale una peseta la vara.

1. Is this hat the largest ? 2. No ; Paul's is the largest.

3. Did he come sooner than you ? 4. No ; he came later than I.

5. Is she less diligent than her sister ? 6. She is more diligent than her sister.

7. Do they read as often as you ? 8. I think they read oftener than we.

9. Do those students write as much as we ? 10. They write more than you.

11. Is this knife as good as yours ? 12. It is better than mine.

13. Who reads the most ? 14. He reads more than I, but his brother reads the most.

15. Can (*sabe*) you swim better than my son ? 16. I swim better than he.

17. Does he sell as many shoes as his neighbour ? 18. He sells more shoes than his neighbour..

19. Is your brother's pen as good as yours ? 20. It is better than mine.

21. Who speaks English (*el inglés*) the best ? 22. The Italian speaks it the best.

23. Which is the best grammar, yours or his ? 24. His is smaller than mine but it is better.

25. Which servant is the most amiable ? 26. The youngest is the most amiable.

27. Which horse is the best? 28. The soldier's is good, yours is better, but the merchant's is the best.
29. Who learns quickest, the girls or boys? 30. The girls learn much quicker.
31. Do you know French well? 32. Yes, but my brother knows it better.
33. Who teaches the best? 34. The tallest man is the best teacher.
35. Is this house the finest (*más hermosa*) in the town? 36. No; the Spanish merchant's is the finest.
37. Will you have this pen or a larger one? 38. I like large ones most.
39. Do not be downcast, my friend. 40. But imagine the difficulties of the undertaking!
41. Is the cloth sufficiently wide? 42. It is not as wide as I would like.

LESSON 19.

USE OF THE PAST TENSES.

In Spanish there are two past tenses, called the "imperfect indicative" and the "past definite".

The first refers to an action in a past time which was habitual, or repeated continually, or which was not concluded immediately and therefore at that time was an imperfect action as regards completion. It always means in English *used* with an infinitive, or the verb *to be* with a present participle, as :—

Cuando vivía en España me bañaba en el mar todos los días.	<i>When I lived (used to live) in Spain I bathed (used to bathe) in the sea every day.</i>
--	--

On the other hand, the past definite (or preterite) always refers to an action completed immediately at the time mentioned, as :—

Fui ayer á la playa y me bañé en el mar.	<i>I went to the sea-side yesterday and bathed in the sea.</i>
--	--

In case of doubt, see if the English verb carries the idea of, or can be changed into, *used to*, or *was (were)* with a present participle, and if so, it is translated with the imperfect tense; otherwise it is the preterite. Examples :—

Cuando V. entró estaba escribiendo (escribía)	<i>When you came in I was writing.</i>
---	--

Iba al teatro todos los días.	<i>I went to the theatre every day.</i>
-------------------------------	---

Cuando en Bélgica fumaba mucho.	<i>I smoked much when in Belgium.</i>
---------------------------------	---------------------------------------

No fumó ayer.	<i>He did not smoke yesterday.</i>
---------------	------------------------------------

Yo le vi en la tienda del mercero.	<i>I saw you in the draper's shop.</i>
------------------------------------	--

The imperfect is naturally used with all professions, such as *era médico*, etc.

Tener (*to have*) is used with the following, instead of *to be*, since they are nouns and not adjectives :—

Tener hambre	sed	calor	frio	miedo	vergüenza	razón
<i>to be hungry</i>	<i>thirsty</i>	<i>warm</i>	<i>cold</i>	<i>afraid</i>	<i>ashamed</i>	<i>right</i>
Tener sueño	valor	salud	lástima	éxito	prisa	
<i>to be sleepy</i>	<i>bold</i>	<i>healthy</i>	<i>to pity</i>	<i>to succeed</i>	<i>to be in a hurry</i>	
Tener cuidado	edad	gana				
<i>to be careful</i>	<i>age</i>	<i>to be desirous, to be in the humour</i>				

When referring to inanimate objects, the translation is literal, the adjective being used with **estar**, as :

El agua está caliente. *The water is warm.*

Tener que means *to have to*, implying obligation, as :—

Tengo que ir. *I have to go.*

Haber de is used with the same meaning, viz. :—

He de ir. *I have to go.*

Haber que is used impersonally, as :—

Hay que escribir los ejercicios. *The exercises { must have to } be written.*

But is translated **sino** when following a negation, no verb being used after it. In all other cases use **pero**. Examples :—

No tengo manzanas sino naranjas. *I have not apples but oranges.*

¿Qué debe hablar sino español? *What must he speak but Spanish?*

No quiero que lea, sino que escriba la lección. *I don't want him to read, but to write the lesson.*

VOCABULARY.

la edad, *the age*
 el chico, *the little boy, youngster*
 el invierno, *the winter*
 el año, *the year*
 el mozo, *the waiter, young man*
 el frío, *the cold*
 la sed, *the thirst*
 el hambre, *the hunger*
 la razón, *the reason*
 tener razón, *to be right*

el continente, *the Continent*
 el miedo, *the fear*
 la catedral, *the cathedral*
 la señorita, *the young lady (miss)*
 la ventana, *the window*
 el niño, *the child*
 el ayudante, *the assistant*
 nueve, *nine*
 á las nueve, *at nine o'clock*
 Bélgica, *Belgium*

mal de cabeza, <i>headache</i>	chico (adj.), <i>small</i>
cada, <i>each</i>	quedan, <i>to remain</i>
el oficial, <i>the officer, the official</i>	abrir, <i>to open</i>
antes de (with inf.), <i>before</i>	pasar, <i>to spend (time)</i>
antes que, <i>before</i>	tener * que (inf.) } <i>to have to</i>
delante de, <i>in front of</i>	haber * de (inf.) } <i>to have to</i>
lo que, <i>what (before a verb), that which</i>	¿ cuánto hace ? <i>how long is it ?</i>
el propósito, <i>the proposal</i>	¿ hace mucho ? <i>is it long ? (time)</i>
Sevilla, <i>Seville</i>	bastar, <i>to suffice</i>
real, <i>royal</i>	deber, <i>to must (obligation)</i>
desde, <i>since</i>	deber de, <i>to must (doubt)</i>
pasado, <i>past, last</i>	bajar, <i>to descend, bring down</i>
sino, <i>but</i>	fumar, <i>to smoke</i>
	pasar por, <i>to pass by, to call at</i>

EXERCISE 19.

1. ¿ Qué dijo (*said*) él en su carta de la semana pasada ? 2. Dijo que iba á pasar el invierno en Italia.
3. ¿ Dice el mozo que él le dió la carta ? 4. No ; sino que la entregó á su ayudante.
5. ¿ Qué hacían los chicos ? 6. Jugaban en el jardín.
7. ¿ Qué tiene V. que hacer ? 8. Tengo que escribir varias cartas.
9. ¿ No tienen ellos buenas plumas ? 10. No tienen plumas sino lápices.
11. ¿ Cuánto hace que no ha visto ella á su madre ? 12. Hace más de seis meses.
13. ¿ Hace mucho que está V. aquí ? 14. Estoy aquí desde hace un año.
15. ¿ No basta estudiar bien las lecciones ? 16. No ; debe V. escribirlas todas.
17. ¿ Habían escrito Vs. los ejercicios antes de ir á la escuela ? 18. Sí, señor ; los escribimos ayer.
19. ¿ Qué ha de hacer el mozo ? 20. Debe bajar mi equipaje.
21. ¿ Á qué hora van Vds. al despacho ? 22. Tenemos que estar allí á las nueve.
23. ¿ Porqué no se quita V. el gabán ? 24. Porque tengo mucho frío.
25. ¿ Tenían ellos mucha sed cuando llegaron á casa ? 26. No ; pero tenían mucha hambre.
27. ¿ Qué dice el dependiente ? 28. Dice que V. no tiene razón en lo que dice.
29. ¿ Fumaba V. mucho cuando en el continente ? 30. Sí, porque allí los cigarros son baratos.
31. ¿ Dónde vió V. á la señorita ? 32. Estaba en la ventana cuando yo pasé por su casa.

33. ¿ Tiene ella miedo de abrir las ventanas ? 34. Tiene miedo de las corrientes de aire.

35. ¿ No sabía el mozo que debía quedar en el almacén ? 36. Sí, lo sabía, pero no lo hizo.

37. ¿ Iban ellas muchas veces al teatro ? 38. Sí, iban tres ó cuatro días de cada semana.

1. Did you have your lesson yesterday ? 2. No ; I had to go to the park with the children.

3. Where were you going when I saw you ? 4. I was going to the station.

5. Has he changed his intention (*mudar de propósito*) ? 6. Yes, he won't go now.

7. How did you spend your time when in Seville ? 8. We went often to the Cathedral, the Royal Palace, and the river.

9. What was the matter with her ? 10. She had the headache.

11. Were the cigars large ? 12. No, they were very small.

13. Did you tell him that I had come ? 14. Yes, I told him (of it, *se lo*).

15. Did you often go to the theatre ? 16. Yes, we went every week.

17. Was the little boy hungry ? 18. Yes, he was very hungry.

19. What were you doing in the shop ? 20. I went there to speak to the shopkeeper (*tendero*).

21. For what did you go ? 22. I went for a book and some writing paper.

23. What had they to do to-day ? 24. They had many letters to write.

25. Had you learned your lesson ? 26. No, I had not learned it.

27. Did she give them to them ? 28. Yes, but not before I arrived.

29. Had he taken the shoes to the shoemaker (*zapatero*) ? 30. Yes, he took them two days ago.

31. Did you write to your brother before receiving (*antes de recibir*) his letters ? 32. No, but I answered him at once.

33. Did you go to the Royal Palace ? 34. No ; but to the Cathedral.

LESSON 20.

The attention of the student is especially called to the difference between the demonstrative adjective, or pronoun *that* and the relative pronoun *that*. English students in the Elementary stage do not often remark the difference.

That before a noun, or standing for a noun, is translated **ese**, **esa** (Lesson 2), **aquel**, **aquella**; or where the gender is not clearly demonstrated by **eso**, **aquello**, the plural being **esos**, **esas**, **aquellos**, **aquellas**.

Ese is used to mean *that* which is near the person addressed, and **aquel** means *that yonder* (distant from both parties). Examples :—

ese, aquel, hombre ; esa, aquella, mujer ; esos, aquellos, hombres ;
esas, aquellas, mujeres.

Esta escuela es más grande que *This school is larger than that.*
aquella.

No me gusta esta gramática ; prefiero *I do not like this grammar ; I prefer*
that.

¿Qué tal le parece eso ?

What do you think of that ?

¿Que quiere decir eso ?

What does that mean ?

Este es mi lápiz, ese es de V., y aquel *This is my pencil, that is yours, and*
that (other) is my brother's.

That is translated **el de, la de, el que, la que**, in relative clauses,
instead of repeating the noun, viz. :—

No tengo mi cuaderno, sino el de V. (*that is, el cuaderno, copy book*).

Tiene mi pluma y la de V. (*that is, la pluma*).

Este muchacho es el que vino ayer (*that is, el muchacho*).

¿Quién es aquel hombre ; el de los bigotes grandes (*that is, el hombre,*
bigotes, mustaches) ?

Aquel, aquella, aquello, may replace the article, e.g. :—

Aquella á quien V. vió ayer. *She whom you saw yesterday.*

What before a verb, unless interrogative, is translated **lo que** (*that*
which), e.g. :—

Lo que dice ese hombre no es verdad. *What (that which) that man says is*
not true.

The relative *that* or *which* is often omitted in English but never in
Spanish. Example :—

La carta que V. ha escrito. *The letter you have written.*

In simple phrases like the one just mentioned it is commoner to
use **que**, but in any case where there would be ambiguity, or in a
second relative, **cual** with the article is used. Compare :—

El amigo del español con el cual (*or*
quien) tenía negocios. *The Spaniard's friend with whom I*
had business.

Los que nos han escrito y á los cuales V. vió ayer. *Those who have written to us and*
whom you saw yesterday.

VOCABULARY.

el conocimiento, <i>the bill of lading</i>	primero, <i>first</i>
la caja fuerte, <i>the safe</i>	no hay de qué, <i>do not mention it</i>
los fondos, <i>the funds</i>	conforme, <i>exact, agreeable</i>
el fardo, <i>the package</i>	del todo, <i>at all</i>
la oferta, <i>the offer</i>	importante, <i>important</i>
la ventaja, <i>the advantage</i>	por allí, <i>over there, that way</i>
la lengua, <i>the tongue, language</i>	suerte, <i>fortune, chance</i>
la maleta, <i>the travelling bag</i>	agradecer *, <i>to thank</i>
el jefe, <i>the chief, superior</i>	mudarse, <i>to change (clothing, etc.)</i>
el lado, <i>the side</i>	ofender, <i>to offend</i>
la gorra, <i>the cap</i>	recordar *, <i>to remember, remind</i>
el refrán, <i>the proverb</i>	deber, <i>to ought, should</i>
la pérdida, <i>the loss</i>	rehusar, <i>to refuse</i>
común, <i>ordinary, common</i>	rechazar, <i>to spurn, reject</i>
él que, <i>he that, the one that</i>	llorar, <i>to weep</i>
la que, <i>she that, the one that</i>	creer, <i>to believe (often used for the English to think)</i>
mútuo, <i>mutual</i>	
la amistad, <i>the friendship</i>	

EXERCISE 20.

1. ¿ Dónde está ese conocimiento ? 2. El dependiente dice que está en ese cajón (*drawer*).
3. ¿ Debemos pagar los fondos que nos pide ? 4. Digo yo que no debemos pagarlas.
5. ¿ Qué es lo que dice nuestro amigo mútuo ? 6. Dice que nos agradece la amistad que le hemos mostrado.
7. No hay tiempo para hacer eso. 8. Yo digo que hay tiempo para todo.
9. ¿ Qué debo escribir á esos sres ? 10. Escriba que sentimos decirles que el vapor se hundió.
11. Espero que tenga V. mejor suerte. 12. Gracias ; lo espero yo también.
13. Es preciso despachar los fardos que hemos recibido. 14. Vamos á despacharlos, sin pérdida de tiempo.
15. ¿ Está V. conforme con lo que dice ? 16. Estoy perfectamente conforme con ello.
17. Muchas gracias por las ofertas que me ha hecho V. 18. ¡ No hay de qué ! caballero.
19. ¿ Cree V. que resultarán grandes ventajas ? 20. No, sr ; no creo eso del todo.
21. ¿ Quién es aquel caballero ? 22. Es maestro de la escuela de lenguas.
23. ¿ Quiere V. comprar esa maleta ? 24. No ; quiero comprar aquella.

25. ¿ Ha hablado V. de aquello á mis jefes ? 26. No ; todavía no les he hablado de ello.
27. ¿ Á quién quiere V. comprar los géneros ? 28. Quiero comprar á los que venden barato.
29. ¿ Cree V. que ese hombre vende barato ? 30. Estoy seguro de ello.
31. ¿ Á qué lado está la tienda, ese ó aquel ? 32. Dice el chico que no está en esta calle.
33. ¿ No ha hecho ella más que eso ? 34. No ; es todo lo que ha hecho.
35. ¿ Qué se debe hacer primero ? 36. Todos deben mudarse de ropa.
37. ¿ Por dónde se va á la catedral ? 38. Por aquí, sr. ; segunda calle á la derecha (*right*).

1. What is the matter, my friend ? 2. There is something in that letter that offends me.
3. Have you reminded him of what he owes us ? 4. No, but I am going to write that he must pay us.
5. Is that the boy who came (*vino*) yesterday ? 6. No ; it was (*fué*) that other (one).
7. Do you think we should (*deber*) accept the offer ? 8. No ; we think you should refuse it.
9. Are the orders you have received important ? 10. I do not think they are very important.
11. Is that your warehouse ? 12. No ; that warehouse does not belong to us.
13. Is that the church we visited last week ? 14. No ; it is that you see over there.
15. Which do you like most, this or that ? 16. I like that (one) most.
17. Has he given you what he promised ? 18. Yes, and that book you see there also.
19. Who is that girl ? 20. Which ? she who is crying ?
21. Have you the letter that arrived yesterday ? 22. No ; that and the others are in the safe.
23. What do you think of that ? 24. I think he is right (Lesson 19).
25. Whose are those ? 26. That is mine and that yonder is my brother's.
27. Which is the boy that came ? 28. The one that has a black cap.
29. Is that a Spanish proverb ? 30. No ; all those are French proverbs.
31. Do you think these articles are good ? 32. No ; I think they are very common.
33. What is that you were saying ? 34. I said that the train was late.

LESSON 21.

How and *what* in exclamatory phrases are translated **cuán** or **qué**, except before a verb, when it is **cómo**, as :—

¡ Qué hermoso cielo !	<i>What a beautiful sky !</i>
¡ Cómo huyó el cobarde !	<i>How the coward ran !</i>
¡ Qué viva feliz !	<i>May you (he) live happy !</i>
¡ Qué de gente !	<i>What a lot of people !</i>
¡ Cuán despacio caminan !	<i>How slowly they walk !</i>
¡ Qué lastima !	<i>What a pity !</i>
¡ Cuán buena es mi madre !	<i>How good is my mother !</i>
¡ Cuán bien discernimos los yerros agenos !	<i>How well we see the faults of others !</i>

How, meaning "how much," is **cuánto**, e.g. :—

¡ Cuánto me alegro de ver á V. !	<i>How glad I am to see you !</i>
----------------------------------	-----------------------------------

Haber, besides being used as auxiliary *to have* (Lessons 3 and 4) translates the impersonal *there to be*, but with this meaning it is only used, like all impersonal verbs, in the 3rd person singular, even though the noun be plural.

It is slightly different in the present indicative, being **hay** instead of **ha**, except in the compound tense, **ha habido**, e.g. :—

Ha habido mucha gente.	<i>There have been many people.</i>
¿ Cuántos hay ?	<i>How many are there ?</i>
Habia algunos que no querían estudiar.	<i>There were some who did not want to study.</i>
¿ Ha de haber mucha gente ?	<i>Are there to be many people ?</i>
¿ Puede haber cosa más hermosa ?	<i>Can there be anything prettier ?</i>
Si hubiera tales cosas.	<i>If there were such things.</i>
Comeremos melocotones si los hay.	<i>We shall eat some peaches if there are any.</i>

Ser is used impersonally (Lessons 12, 23, and 28) with the words *preciso justo, necesario, lástima, cierto, tarde, temprano*, etc., the nominative "it" being omitted :—

Before *calor, frio, luna, sol*, etc., **hacer** is used instead of "to be", as :—

hace calor	<i>it is warm</i>	hace frio	<i>it is cold</i>
hace fresco	<i>it is cool</i>	hace sol	<i>it is sunny</i>
¿ Qué tiempo hace ?			<i>What kind of weather is it ?</i>
Hace un tiempo seco.			<i>It is dry weather.</i>

To be (estar, ser) is used if a noun is mentioned, as :—

El tiempo estaba frío.

Era una noche fría y sombría del mes de diciembre.

The weather was cold.

It was a cold and sombre night of the month of December.

Hacer is also used to translate the English *ago*, *how long*, etc., as :—

Hace cerca de 8 días que estoy aquí.

¿Cuánto hace que no ha escrito?

¿Hacía mucho que no había tenido noticias de él?

I have been here about a week.

How long is it since he wrote?

Had much time passed since you had heard from him?

VOCABULARY.

el tranvía, *the tramway*

el calor, *the heat*

el verano, *the summer*

la época, *the epoch, season*

el polvo, *the dust*

el sol, *the sun*

el asiento, *the seat*

el predicador, *the preacher*

el sermón, *the sermon*

la gota, *the drop*

el viento, *the wind*

la toalla, *the towel*

el jabón, *the soap*

el pan fresco, *the new bread*

la tostada, *the toast*

la lluvia, *the rain*

el buque, *the ship*

variable, *variable*

magnífico, *magnificent*

húmedo, *moist, damp*

insuportable, *insupportable*

de otro modo, *otherwise*

casi, *almost*

pedazo, *piece (portion)*

pedacito, *little piece*

por lo general, *generally*

de buena hora, *early*

todo el mundo, *everybody*

de prisa, *in haste*

sofocante, *suffocating*

perfectamente, *perfectly*

anoche, *last night*

presentar, *to introduce*

celebrar, *to celebrate, to take place*

celebro mucho, *I am delighted*

levantarse, *to get up*

alegrarse, *to rejoice, to be glad*

tardar, *to delay, be long*

volver *, *to return*

llover *, *to rain*

tronar *, *to thunder*

abatir, *to beat down, lay*

nevár *, *to snow*

helar *, *to freeze*

granizar, *to hail*

mirar, *to look (at)*

disfrutar, *to enjoy*

pasarlo, *to be (in health)*

hay que, *one must*

faltarle, } *to want*

hacer falta } *to be short of*

acostarse *, *to lie down, to go to bed*

aprovechar, *to take advantage of*

N.B.—**Ito, ita**, added to a noun, means small (little) or endearment, as : *Juán*, John ; *Juanito*, Johnny. **uelo, uela**, means small and ugly. **ísimo, a**, added to an adjective, is equal to *very*.

EXERCISE 21.

1. ¿Parece que va á llover ? 2. Sí, hace un tiempo variable y desagradable.
3. ¿Está bueno el tiempo ? 4. Sí, hace buén tiempo.
5. ¿Qué tiempo hacía cuando estuve en España ? 6. Hacia un tiempo magnífico.
7. ¿Hace mucho calor en Sevilla ? 8. Sí, en verano el calor es insuportable.
9. El tiempo está húmedo ; vamos en tranvía. 10. Tenemos siempre en esta época un tiempo húmedo.
11. Por la mañana ha llovido mucho. 12. Pero habrá abatido el polvo.
13. ¡Mire V., qué hermoso sol ! 14. Sí, disfrutamos un tiempo perfectísimo.
15. ¿Cuánto hace que salió su amigo ? 16. Hoy hace quince días.
17. ¿Es preciso escribir los temas ? 18. Es muy preciso ; de otro modo no los aprenderá V. bien.
19. ¿A qué hora se levanta V. ? 20. Por lo general me levanto á las siete.
21. ¿Se levantan los españoles de buena hora ? 22. Sí, todo el mundo se levanta temprano.
23. Entre V. y tome asiento (siéntese). 24. Siento qué no puedo quedar ; estoy muy de prisa.
25. ¿Qué tal (*how*) le gusta ese predicador ? 26. Mucho, pero no me gustan los sermones largos.
27. ¿Qué le parece del tiempo ? 28. Hace un calor sofocante.
29. Buenos días, don Juán, ¿como lo pasa V. ? 30. Perfectamente ; cuánto me alegro de ver á V.
31. ¿Cuánto tardará V. en volver ? 32. Volveré á las once, lo más tarde.
33. ¿Tardaré mucho en aprender el español ? 34. No mucho ; pero hay que aprovechar toda ocasión para estudiar.
35. ¿Ha dejado V. de fumar ? 36. No he fumado desde hace ocho días.
37. ¿No ha enviado la carta al correo ? 38. No ; tampoco la he escrito.

1. Are you up (*levantado*) already ? 2. Yes, I rise very early.
3. Do you like to get up early ? 4. Not so early as in Spain.
5. How sleepy you are (*tener sueño*) ! 6. Yes, I did not go to bed last night.
7. Do you know what time it is ? 8. No ; but it cannot be late.
9. I am going to bed now ; shall you be long ? 10. I shall not be long in following you.
11. What are you short of ? 12. I want (*me falta*) a towel and a piece of soap.
13. Will you have new bread ? 14. No ; I prefer toast.

15. It is getting late, is it not ? (*verdad*?) 16. It is almost time to go to bed.
17. At what time do you want to get up to-morrow ? 18. Call me, please, at six exactly (*en punto*).
19. How glad I am to see you ! How is your brother ? 20. He is very well, thank you.
21. What a beautiful fan you have ! 22. Yes, I bought it in Madrid.
23. Did you like your journey abroad ? 24. Very much ; one learns a great deal in travelling.
25. Good morning, Mr. John ; how are you ? 26. Very well, thanks ; please seat yourself.
27. I have the pleasure to introduce you to Mr. A. 28. I am delighted to know you, sir.
29. Have you sent him the samples ? 30. Yes, I sent him a good collection yesterday.
31. How ugly these designs are ! 32. That is what I said.
33. Is it as hot in England as here ? 34. It is not too hot nor too cold there.
35. Is it very windy ? 36. No ; but it is very cold.
37. Is it going to rain ? 38. I think so (*creo que sí*) ; I feel drops of rain.
39. How good you are ! 40. Not at all, madam.
41. What a large ship that is ! 42. Yes, it is a man-of-war (*buque de guerra*).

LESSON 22.

Mucho replaces **muy** when no other word follows it, as :—

¿ Está **muy** enfermo ?—*Is he very ill ?* Si **mucho**—*Yes, very.*

We have already mentioned the defective verb *to will* in Lesson 7, and now ask the student's careful attention to the other defectives, *to can* and *to may*, which are both translated by *poder*. In both cases the subjunctive often follows. Examples :—

¿ Puedo tomar este libro ?	<i>May I take this book ?</i>
¿ Puede V. dejarlo ?	<i>Can you leave it ?</i>
No pude escribirle ayer.	<i>I could not write him yesterday.</i>
¿ Iria V. si pudiera ?	<i>Would you go if you could ?</i>
¿ Puede ser que no me escriba !	<i>He may not write to me !</i>
Puede que no le vea	<i>I may not see him.</i>
Podia haber unas cien personas.	<i>There might be some 100 persons.</i>
¿ Si pudiera ser eso !	<i>If that might be !</i>

Se added to an infinitive shows that the verb is reflective (meaning oneself), and that before each person, in each tense, the corresponding pronoun is required : *myself, thyself, etc.* (Lesson 12). This pronoun is added to the verb, instead of preceding it, in three special cases (Lesson 10). When emphasis is necessary put after the verb *á mi mismo, á si mismo, etc.*

Me engaño á mi mismo.	<i>I deceive myself.</i>
V. se engaña á si mismo.	<i>You deceive yourself.</i>
Ellos se engañan á si mismo.	<i>They deceive themselves.</i>

Se added to infinitives means also the verb *to be*, e.g. :—

Merece la pena de hacerse. *It is worth doing (being done).*

After prepositions the infinitive must be used instead of the present participle, e.g. :—

Al ir.	<i>On going.</i>
Hay dificultad en decirlo.	<i>There is difficulty in saying it.</i>
Antes de hacerlo.	<i>Before doing it.</i>
Después de haberlo hecho.	<i>After having done it.</i>
Por haberlo hecho.	<i>For having done it.</i>
Al verlo.	<i>On seeing it.</i>

Notice the translation of the following :—

¿Á cuántos estamos ?	<i>What is the date ?</i>
Estamos á quince.	<i>It is the fifteenth.</i>
Salgo hoy en quince.	<i>I leave to-day fortnight.</i>
Llegará de hoy en ocho días.	<i>He will arrive in a week.</i>
Á principios del mes.	<i>At the beginning of the month.</i>
Á fines (últimos) del mes.	<i>At the end of the month.</i>
La semana que viene (or próxima).	<i>Next week.</i>
La semana pasada.	<i>Last week.</i>
Al próximo trimestre.	<i>The next quarter.</i>
Á mediados de julio.	<i>About the middle of July.</i>
No tiene razón, ni deja de tenerla.	<i>He is neither right nor wrong.</i>

VOCABULARY.

el accidente, *the accident*
 el choque, *the collision*
 el ladrón, *the thief*
 el desprecio, *the contempt*
 el proverbio, *the proverb*
 el pájaro, *the bird*

la preposición, *the preposition*
 la libertad, *the liberty*
 el comercio, *the commerce*
 el idioma, *the idiom*
 el puente, *the bridge*
 el vaso, *the glass (tumbler)*

la cuchara, *the spoon*
 el tenedor, *the fork*
 el patio, *the yard*
 el ruido, *the noise*
 la ópera, *the opera*
 el inconveniente } *the objection*
 la objeción
 la facilidad, *the ease*
 el papel secante, *the blotting paper*
 el cajón, *the drawer*
 el modo, *the mode, manner*
 á la derecha, *to the right*
 á la izquierda, *to the left*
 la aplicación, *the application*
 el arrabal, *the suburb*
 la ocasión, *the occasion, opportunity*
 lo antes posible, *soonest possible*
 al instante, *at once*
 angosto } *narrow*
 estrecho }
 antiguo, *old, ancient*
 por desgracia, *unfortunately*
 después de, *after*
 subjuntivo, *subjunctive*
 regularmente, *regularly*
 á veces, *sometimes*
 último, *last*

la costumbre, *the custom*
 la bondad, *the kindness*
 sin, *without*
 quizá } *perhaps*
 quizás }
 asegurar, *to assure*
 cojer, *to catch*
 quedarse, *to remain*
 devolver *, *to give back*
 estar de regreso, *to be back*
 hacer * bien, *to do right*
 casarse, *to get married*
 reparar, *to notice*
 dejar caer, *to fall (something)*
 importar, *to matter*
 continuar, *to continue*
 fabricar, *to make, manufacture*
 molestar, *to trouble*
 mudar, *to change*
 mudar de casa, *to remove*
 quejarse, *to complain*
 acontecer *, *to happen*
 tener la seguridad, *to be sure*
 tener cuidado, *to be careful*
 guardar, *to keep*
 cenar, *to sup, to take supper*

EXERCISE 22.

1. ¿Qué dice ese caballero? 2. Dice que á veces, quien más mira, menos ve.
3. ¿Ha habido algún accidente? 4. Sí, un choque de trenes cerca de Córdoba.
5. ¿Cuánto tiempo se quedará V. en España? 6. Volveré lo antes posible.
7. ¿Le ha devuelto V. su libro? 8. No ; pero se lo devolveré la semana que viene.
9. ¿Le ha dicho V. que puede ir á casa? 10. Sí, y ya estaré de regreso.
11. Puede que no haya dejado sus direcciones. 12. Tiene V. razón; iré á preguntar.
13. ¿Hago bien en escribir estos temas? 14. Si, V. hace muy bien.
15. ¿De qué se queja V.? 16. De ese señor que me mira con desprecio.

17. ¿ Que proverbio es eso ? 18. Eso de "antes que te cases mira lo que haces".

19. Mire V. qué hermoso pájaro. 20. Sí, que es muy hermoso.

21. ¿ Ha reparado V. eso de las preposiciones ? 22. Sí, y voy estudiándolo ahora.

23. ¿ Hay mucha libertad en España ? 24. No tanto como en Inglaterra.

25. ¿ Le gustan á V. las costumbres de España ? 26. Sí, me gustan mucho.

27. ¿ Dónde compró V. esas tarjetas postales ? 28. En una librería de los arrabales de la ciudad.

29. ¿ Han cogido ese ladrón ? 30. Sí, le cojieron en la calle del mercado.

31. ¿ Hay vasos y cucharas ? 32. Sí, los hay, voy á traérselos.

33. Tenga la bondad de traer tambien cuchillos y tenedores. 34. Se los traeré al instante.

35. ¿ Ha visto V. algunos de los patios de Sevilla ? 36. Sí, y puedo asegurarle que son magníficos.

37. ¿ Dónde se habla el español ? 38. En España, la América del sud y Méjico.

39. ¿ Piensa ocuparse en el comercio ? 40. No; creo que se va á hacer artista.

1. What a noise ! What has happened ? 2. Nothing extraordinary.
The servant has perhaps fallen a glass.

3. How narrow this street is ! 4. Many of the old streets are narrow.

5. Is it necessary to go ? 6. It is necessary for you to go.

7. I expected your wife (*señora*) would come. 8. Unfortunately she is not well.

9. Will you come to the opera ? 10. I have no objection to that.

11. Can you do these lessons ? 12. Not with the ease I would like.

13. Never mind ! Go on studying. 14. I have that intention.

15. Is the station on the left or the right ? 16. You will find it on the left.

17. Is there any blotting paper ? 18. There is some in that drawer.

19. Do you go to the Spanish classes ? 20. Yes, I go to the last class on Wednesdays.

21. What remains to be done after these lessons ? 22. It remains to practise these rules and to study the subjunctive mood.

23. And afterwards ? 24. There will be common phrases and idioms to learn.

25. Shall I be long before I can speak fairly well ? 26. You will not be long if you practise regularly.

27. Would it be possible to speak Spanish in a year ? 28. Possible—yes, but it needs much application.

29. Where do they manufacture linen ? 30. There are works in Ireland, Scotland and Yorkshire (*condado de York*).

31. I do not want to trouble you. 32. You are not troubling me at all (*del todo*).

33. Have you changed your clothing ? 34. No ; I will go and change at once.

35. Try to do it without offending them. 36. I am sure that I shall not offend them.

37. Did you tell them to take care when crossing the bridge ? 38. Yes, sir, I told them.

39. He says that he is not coming to supper. 40. Well, keep this for him.

LESSON 23.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

The subjunctive mood is extensively employed in Spanish, and calls for careful attention. Unlike the indicative, the subjunctive mood cannot of itself express an action in such a manner as to form complete sense, but its signification is determined by a governing verb, to which it is subordinate (subjoined).

First, it must be understood that the indicative mood denotes facts and may be called the mood of certainty, whilst the subjunctive is the mood of doubt, or of mere possibility. The latter is always used when one is not sure that the action ordered, desired, or implied will be accomplished.

It will help the student if he remembers that after the conjunction *que* an action that has not already been performed, or which refers to an indefinite time, must be in the subjunctive.

The subjunctive follows (1) commands, entreaties, and advice, as :—

Mando que V. vaya.

I command you to go.

Le dije que fuese.

I told him to go.

Le suplico que lo haga.

I beg you to do it.

Le aconsejé que estudiara esa regla.

I advised him to study that rule.

Digale V. que vaya.

Tell him to go.

(2) After expressions of hope, doubt, fear, joy, sorrow, and all mental actions, as :—

Espero que venga V.

I hope you will come.

Deseo que V. hable con él.

I desire you to speak to him.

Dudo que haya llegado.

I doubt that he will have arrived.

Temo que no llegue á tiempo.	<i>I fear he may not arrive in time.</i>
Me alegra de que V. haya hablado.	<i>I am glad you have spoken.</i>
Siento saber que su hermana esté enferma.	<i>I am sorry to hear your sister is ill.</i>
Está enojado de que V. no le haya visitado.	<i>He is vexed because you have not visited him.</i>
Estoy sorprendido de que V. no sea más atento.	<i>I am surprised that you are not more attentive.</i>

(2a) But where the two verbs refer to the same subject the infinitive is employed instead of the subjunctive, as :—

Quiero ir.	<i>I want to go.</i>
Quiero que él vaya.	<i>I want him to go.</i>
Deseo hablarle.	<i>I desire to speak to him.</i>
Deseo que V. le hable.	<i>I desire you to speak to him.</i>
Espero ir.	<i>I hope to go.</i>
Espero que él vaya.	<i>I hope he will go.</i>

VOCABULARY.

el país, <i>the country</i>	hasta luego, <i>good-bye for the present</i>
la voz, <i>the voice</i>	¿qué tal? <i>how?</i>
el artesano, <i>the artisan</i>	fuerte, <i>strong</i>
el río, <i>the river</i>	encantador, <i>charming</i>
el dolor, <i>the pain</i>	el compañero, <i>the companion</i>
la muela, <i>the tooth (molar)</i>	desagradable, <i>disagreeable</i>
el dentista, <i>the dentist</i>	inmediatamente, <i>immediately</i>
la causa, <i>the cause</i>	según, <i>according to</i>
la huelga, <i>the strike</i>	enojarse, <i>to get vexed</i>
la calidad, <i>the quality</i>	burlarse, <i>to joke, to make fun of</i>
el algodón, <i>the cotton</i>	amar, <i>to love</i>
la acción, <i>the action</i>	abandonar, <i>to abandon</i>
la universidad, <i>the university</i>	acusar, <i>to accuse, to acknowledge</i>
la entrega, <i>the delivery</i>	ronco, <i>hoarse</i>
el esmero, <i>the attention, the correctness</i>	querer * decir, <i>to mean</i>
el progreso, <i>the progress</i>	reirse * de, <i>to laugh at</i>
el brazo, <i>the arm</i>	temer, <i>to fear</i>
el resfriado, <i>the cold</i>	advertir *, <i>to warn, to advise</i>
la charla, <i>the chatter</i>	impedir *, <i>to impede</i>
el proyecto, <i>the project</i>	arreglar, <i>to arrange</i>
el recibo, <i>the receipt</i>	callarse, <i>to be silent</i>
perezoso, <i>idle</i>	marear, <i>to annoy, to worry</i>
	marcharse, <i>to go away</i>

arrojar, <i>to throw</i>	avisar, <i>to advise</i>
doler*, <i>to pain</i>	restablecerse, <i>to become well, to get better</i>
sacar, <i>to pull out, to draw out</i>	aguardar, <i>to wait</i>
activar, <i>to push on</i>	acerarse, <i>to approach</i>
no hacer * caso, <i>to take no notice</i>	emplear, <i>to employ</i>
consultar, <i>to consult</i>	subir, <i>to ascend (come up)</i>
ofrecerse *, <i>to offer</i>	pasearse, <i>to take a walk</i>
expresarse, <i>to express</i>	

EXERCISE 23.

1. Le ruego no se marche V. 2. Lo siento, pero debo marcharme ahora mismo.
3. Pues, hasta luego. 4. Adiós, y páselo V. bien.
5. ¿Le ha dicho V. que fuese allí? 6. Sí, pero no hace caso de lo que digo.
7. ¿Le dijeron ellos que viniese? 8. Si, pero no quiso venir, diciendo que le dolía el brazo.
9. ¿Qué hizo el pobre artesán? 10. Se arrojó al río.
11. Tengo un fuerte resfriado, y dolor de muelas. 12. Lo siento mucho. ¿Que muela le duele?
13. Esta, á la izquierda. 14. Hará V. bien en ir á ver al dentista para que la saque.
15. ¿Cuál es la causa de la huelga? 16. Es la mala calidad del algodón que hace el trabajo difícil y desagradable.
17. Dígale V. que active la entrega de los géneros. 18. Se lo he dicho pero no me hace caso.
19. Segundo lo que me dicen ella no va á venir. 20. Hay que decirle que insisto en que venga.
21. Espero que hayan escrito á sus compañeros. 22. Si no han escrito les diré que escriban hoy.
23. Déme V. un libro que pueda consultar. 24. Aquí hay uno que pueda consultar cuando la ocasión se ofrezca.
25. Sus padres sienten que V. pierda las lecciones á la universidad. 26. Pues dígalos V. que voy á estudiar con mucho esmero.
27. Temía que no viniera ella. 28. Dudaba yo que viniera.
29. Quiero que V. me acompañe. 30. Le acompañaré si vuelve mi hermano antes que salga V.
31. Ella no saldrá á menos que V. me acompañe. 32. Pues dígale que le voy á acompañar.
33. Digales V. que no pierdan el tiempo. 34. Ya les he dicho que empleen mejor su tiempo.
35. Deseo que me explique esta regla. 36. Bueno, vamos á ver lo que quiere decir.

1. Though your students are idle they make progress.
2. I often tell them not to be idle, but to study(*estudiar*).
3. What do you want?
4. I want to prevent such actions being done.
5. Would (*quiso*) he not lend you the money?
6. He did not desire to lend it to me.
7. Why do you send me the book?
8. So that you may read and study it.
9. I am angry that they should make fun of me.
10. Do not be angry; they are only children whom one must love.
11. What do you want him to do?
12. I want him to finish his studies soon.
13. This is inexplicable. Do you know what it means?
14. It means that you must tell him to abandon the project.
15. Is he glad that you have spoken so?
16. Yes, he desired me to express myself in that manner.
17. Let me know when he writes.
18. I will advise you when he writes.
19. Mr. Robinez is here.
20. Good; tell him to come up.
21. Is it important that this be done?
22. It is important that it be done, and at once.
23. I want him to acknowledge receipt of my letter.
24. I will tell him to do so immediately.
25. I am sorry your sister is ill.
26. Thanks, but we hope she will soon be better.
27. I am charmed that you are here.
28. Thank you; I only regret that my mother has not been able to come.
29. Had you told it to them before we arrived?
30. No, I was waiting until you came.
31. Let him arrange the affair as soon as he can.
32. I will tell him to arrange it now.
33. Come closer so I can hear you.
34. Your boy does not want me to come closer.
35. I want you to speak to him.
36. He does not want me to speak to him.
37. Tell them to be silent.
38. I have done, but they laughed at me.
39. Why do you want them to be silent?
40. Because their chatter worries me.

LESSON 24.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD (*Continued*).

(3) Use the subjunctive mood after impersonal verbs, unless certainty is expressed, but when the second verb has no subject the infinitive is often used. Examples:—

Es preciso escribir.	}	<i>It is necessary to write.</i>
Es necesario que se escriba.		
Es de desear que V. haga un viaje á España.		<i>It is to be desired that you make a journey to Spain.</i>
Convendría que se hiciera una muestra.		<i>It would be well for them to make a sample.</i>
Bastará	} que V. sepa eso.	<i>It will suffice if you know that.</i>
Será suficiente		
Es lástima que no haya aprovechado la ocasión.		<i>It is a pity you have not taken ad- vantage of the chance.</i>
Es justo que sea castigado.		<i>It is just for him to be punished.</i>
Es preciso que esté aquí á las nueve.		<i>It is necessary for him to be here at nine.</i>
Importa mucho que llegue antes de las ocho.		<i>It is very important that he arrive before 8 o'clock.</i>
Puede que llegue en el tren de la noche.		<i>He may arrive in the night train.</i>
Basta que haya venido ahora.		<i>It is sufficient that he has come now.</i>
Será el único que haya dicho eso.		<i>He will be the only one to have said that.</i>

Let us say again that the subjunctive expresses what is doubtful or contingent and cannot denote any certain or positive action. For example : *aunque viene no le veré*, although he comes I will not see him : indicative mood, because the action of coming is taken as being certain ; but if the speaker is not certain, the translation must be *aunque renga no le veré*, viz. although he (may) come I will not see him.

Examples of the indicative :—

Es cierto que ha llegado.	<i>It is certain that he has arrived.</i>
Es indudable que le ha visto.	<i>She has seen him undoubtedly.</i>
Parece que hay una dificultad.	<i>It seems there is a difficulty.</i>
Resulta que no podemos venderlos.	<i>The result is we cannot sell them.</i>
Es verdad que fué á España.	<i>It is true he went to Spain.</i>

The word *again*, denoting the repetition of an action, is translated **volver á**. **Volver** is conjugated in its different tenses, and the verb follows in the infinitive, e.g. *volver á escribir*, to write again.

To get before an infinitive is **hacer**, as :—

<i>to get made (done)</i>	<i>repaired</i>	<i>written</i>
<i>hacer hacer</i>	<i>hacer componer</i>	<i>hacer escribir, etc.</i>

VOCABULARY.

la atención, *the attention*
 la instrucción, *the instruction*
 la frase, *the phrase*
 la lavandera, *the washerwoman*
 la distancia, *the distance*
 los pormenores, *the particulars*
 el lenguaje, *the language*
 el camino, *the road, way*
 el frac, *the coat*
 el lavado, *the washing*
 el momento, *the moment*
 el comercio interior, *the home trade*
 la servilleta, *the napkin*
 la docena, *the dozen*
 la mayor parte } *the most*
 los (las) más de }
 demasiado, *too, too much*
 entonces, *then*
 en vez de } *instead of*
 en lugar de }
 conveniente, *suitable*
 ser * de }
 ponerse * } *to become*
 hacerse * }

tener * ganas, *to be in the humour*
 tener á bien, *to be good or kind, enough*
 volverse * loco } *to become mad*
 perder * el juicio }
 almacenarse, *to be stored*
 tener cuidado, *to be careful*
 despachar, *to despatch*
 sentarle *, *to fit*
 contestar, *to reply*
 remendar *, *to patch, mend*
 volver * á, *to do again*
 teñir *, *to dye*
 dejar de, *to cease, fail*
 despertar *, *to waken*
 agasajar, *to receive well*
 estar * ausente, *to be absent*
 asistir, *to attend (school, etc.)*
 aconsejar, *to advise*
 quitarse, *to take off*
 suplicar, *to beg*
 rogar *, *to beg, pray*
 dirigir, *to address, direct*
 indicar, *to indicate, to point out*

EXERCISE 24.

1. Digale V. que se quite el sombrero.
2. ¿Qué será de mí ?
3. Suplico que dé V. su mejor atención á este asunto.
4. ¿Dónde se ha puesto el chico ?
5. Le ruego se sirva enviarle otro libro.
6. Dicen que ha perdido el juicio.
7. Estos géneros deben almacenarse hasta que le envíe las instrucciones.
8. Le ruego me lo mande.
9. Sirvase V. tener cuidado de que se despache esta carta.
10. Entonces es de desear que lo envíen cuanto antes.
11. Se ha vuelto loco.
12. Le he dicho que volviera á dirigir mis cartas á Madrid.
13. Le agradeceré que tenga á bien enviarle todos los pormenores.
14. Quisiera mudarme de ropa.
15. Ese lenguaje no es propio de V.
16. Le suplico me indique el camino más corta para ir á la catedral.
17. ¿Me hace V. el favor de cambiarme este billete de banco ?
18. No deje V. de venir á despertarme.
19. Ese frac no le sienta bien en V.
20. Le he dicho que se lo pagara.
21. ¿Qué se ha hecho de mi sombrero ?
22. Le diría que se lo pidiera.
23. No está bien en V. obrar de ese modo.
24. Haga V. que se lo manden.

1. I want him to take off his gloves.
2. Have you taken off your shoes?
3. What has become of him?
4. I told him to be here at 10 o'clock.
5. Tell your friend to look well after him.
6. They told me not to be absent.
7. I ordered him to attend the classes.
8. If I had received them I would have sent them to you.
9. Advise him not to go again.
10. It would be sufficient for you to write each phrase.
11. Tell him instead of playing to do his work.
12. Tell the servant to give the washing to the washerwoman.
13. I should be glad if you would come and stay with me.
14. I do not feel in the humour to go to the concert; the distance is too great.
15. I will reply to him again as well as I can, but for the moment I do not know what to reply.
16. I do not know either of them.
17. Do not omit to get your coat mended.
18. Do not forget what I have told you.
19. You must get the goods made.
20. I told him to have the silk dyed suitable for the home trade.
21. He told me to buy the 22 ins. serviettes if at 12s. 11d. per dozen.
22. He asked me to read the document again.
23. He told the greater part of the men to go forward.
24. What a nuisance to have to re-write the documents!
25. I am sorry you did not come.
26. I want it to be done to-day without fail.

LESSON 25.

The subjunctive is used after certain conjunctive expressions, unless they clearly state a definite fact. The following is a fair list of same, with examples:—

Aunque—

No lo haria aunque me importara la vida.

I would not do it though my life were at stake.

Aunque dijera V. la verdad no le creeria.

He would not believe you even if you spoke the truth.

Antes que—

No piensa salir antes que vuelva la criada.

She does not intend to go out till the servant returns.

Para que—a fin de que—

Le envio mi libro para que lo lea.

I send you my book so you may read it.

A menos que—

No saldrá a menos que V. le acompañe.

She will not go out unless you go with her.

Por poco (noun or adj.) que—

Por poco amistad que tuviera con él.

However slight his friendship might be with him.

Por más (noun or adj.) que—

Por más paciencia que tenga V. nunca tendrá suficiente.

However much patience you have you will never have enough.

Sea que—

Sea que venga ó que no venga.

Whether he comes or not.

En caso que—

En caso que reciba hoy el dinero se lo pagaré.

In case I receive the money to-day I will pay it to you.

Como quiera que—

Como quiera que sea no voy á hacerlo.

However it be I am not going to do it.

Con tal que—

Con tal que escriba V. en seguida no resultará ningún daño.

Provided you write at once no harm will be done.

Sin que—

Sé bien lo que debo hacer sin que me lo diga V.

I know what I must do without you telling me.

En caso que—

En caso que suceda eso. *In case that happens.*

Tan pronto como—

¡Qué venga tan pronto como pueda! *Let him come as soon as he can.*

Mientras que—

Mientras que dure la vida no dejaremos de luchar.

As long as life lasts we shall struggle on.

Por temor de que—

No voy á salir por temor de que me haga daño.

I am not going out for fear it do me harm.

Dado que—

Dado que sucediera tal cosa ¿qué nos importaría?

Granted such a thing might happen, what would it matter to us?

De modo que—

Haga V. el trabajo de modo que su padre quede contento.

Do the work so your father be pleased.

Luego que—

Luego que venga digale que quiero verle.

As soon as he comes tell him I want to see him.

Bien que—

Bien que venga solo, bien acompañado, se quedará aquí, unos días.

Whether he comes alone or not he will remain a few days.

Despues que—

Despues que me haya escrito le haré saber mi decisión.

After he has written to me I will let him know my decision.

Cualquiera que—

Cualquiera que sea la resolución de mi padre.

Whatever be the decision of my father.

VOCABULARY.

el único, <i>the only one</i>	afligido, <i>afflicted</i>
la bolsa, <i>the purse</i>	dudar, <i>to doubt</i>
la manera, <i>the manner</i>	comprender, <i>to comprehend</i>
la guerra, <i>the war</i>	atreverse, <i>to dare</i>
culpable, <i>blameable</i>	servir *, <i>to serve</i>
acaso, <i>perchance</i>	consentir *, <i>to consent</i>
á cántaros, <i>in bucketsful</i>	convencerse *, <i>to be convinced</i>
demasiado, <i>too, too much</i>	encargar, <i>to charge, to commission</i>
Dios, <i>God</i>	convenir *, <i>to suit</i>

EXERCISE 25.

1. Es preciso que V. estudie mucho.
2. No creo que ella sea culpable.
3. Dudo que sea feliz.
4. Su padre está afligido de que pierda las lecciones.
5. No seré yo el único que se atreva á decírselo.
6. Temió que no llegara á tiempo.
7. Me alegraba de que hubiera venido.
8. Me alegraría de que hiciera V. ese viaje.
9. Le dije que nos sirviera cerveza.
10. Ha mandado que no lo vendamos antes que llegue aquí.
11. Buscan un dependiente que hable francés y español.
12. Siento que esté V. enfermo.
13. Tuvo miedo de que perdiera la bolsa.
14. No puedo consentir en que estos discípulos pierdan su tiempo de esta manera.
15. Dijeron que era posible que partieran el dia siguiente.
16. Deseo que V. me comprenda.
17. Se le ayudaría si fuese necesario.
18. ¿ Conoce V. acaso un hombre que hable español y portugués ?
19. Sintió que no -se convenciera V.
20. Le perdonarán lo que haga.
21. Llame V. el mozo para que lleve esta carta al correo.
22. Llamó á la puerta para que le dieran socorro.
23. Escríbame V. lo que diga.
24. Temo que la guerra no acabe este año.
25. Iría V. á España si tuviera bastante tiempo.
26. Iría si tuviera dinero.
27. Pida V. lo que quiera.
28. ¡ Qué diga lo que quiera !
29. Deseo que me prometa V. de venir.
30. Le prometo que vendré aunque llueva á cántaros.
31. Le prohibieron que entrara.
32. Vuelvo á encargar á V. que no se lo descubra á nadie.
33. No había quien vea ni sepa lo que haga.
34. Quieren que no se sepa ello hasta que esté hecho.
35. ¡ Todo sea por Dios !

1. I should like to be able to speak Spanish well.
2. Have patience then and study.
3. You will soon be able to speak fluently.
4. How sorry

I am not to have given more attention to it! 5. Never mind, try now to do a little each day. 6. All that (*cuanto*) he has said is a lie. 7. Whoever he be get him to come in. 8. Whoever it be who has done this he deserves a prize. 9. As soon as he has performed the commission he can return home. 10. If you read more you would make more progress. 11. Do not think they are happy even though they be rich. 12. The more money they gather together the less happy they are. 13. If I received any letters I should forward them without opening them. 14. I wanted him to come and see you. 15. I hope you will enjoy yourselves. 16. I beg you to tell him that I have been. 17. She wished me to visit her every day. 18. Tell the waiter not to waken me before 8 o'clock. 19. Do not be envious of the prosperity of others. 20. Kindly lend me a few good books. 21. We asked him for beer and he served us with wine. 22. Make him change it then. 23. No matter, I do not desire to trouble anyone.

LESSON 26.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD, SEQUENCE OF TENSES.

After the infinitive, present indicative, future indicative or imperative, use the *present* subjunctive, and after all other tenses use the imperfect.

The future subjunctive is not used in conversation, unless it be in quoting proverbs, etc. Examples :—

Debemos esperar que todo salga á medida de nuestros deseos.	<i>We must hope that all will turn out as we desire.</i>
Es de desear que no se cometan injusticias.	<i>It is to be hoped that injustice will not be done.</i>
Quiere impedir que se hagan faltas.	<i>He wants to prevent them making mistakes.</i>
Deseo que comprenda ella.	<i>I desire her to understand.</i>
Le diré que venga á casa.	<i>I will tell him to come home.</i>
Digale que venga en seguida.	<i>Tell him to come at once.</i>
Quería que le escribiera.	<i>He wanted me to write him.</i>
Yo le diría que fuera á verle.	<i>I should tell him to go and see her.</i>
Quisiera que me lo enviara.	<i>I should like him to send it to me.</i>

Mandar, and other verbs of command, may sometimes have the infinitive, e.g. :—

le mandé que lo hiciera
or le mandé hacerlo.

Creer governs the indicative unless negative.

Esperar, meaning *to expect*, is used with the future indicative.

Many English nouns ending in *ty* become Spanish by changing this termination into **dad**, e.g. capacity, *capacidad*, etc.

The greater part of English nouns ending in *tion* can be made Spanish by changing the *t* into *c*, and accenting the last syllable, viz. :-

application, aplicación *attention, atención.*

The two most notable exceptions are :—

Notice that the double letters of these and similar English words are not permissible in Spanish. See note, page 2, respecting double letters.

Should may simply mean the conditional tense, or may be a verb itself (**deber**), as :—

Yo iría si pudiera. *I should go if I could.*

El estudiante debería respetar á su maestro. *The student ought (should) to respect his teacher.*

Note that the conjunction **y** is written é before words beginning in i or hi.

Or is translated ú before o or ho.

VOCABULARY.

<i>la paz, the peace</i>	<i>el servicio, service</i>
<i>el proceso, the law-suit</i>	<i>de súbito, suddenly</i>
<i>el aguijón, the prick, goad</i>	<i>humilde, humble</i>
<i>la oración, the prayer</i>	<i>pues, since</i>
<i>la colocación, the situation (post)</i>	<i>honroso, honourable</i>
<i>la contabilidad, the art of keeping accounts</i>	<i>corto, short</i>
<i>buenos antecedentes, good character</i>	<i>á menos de que, unless</i>
<i>el acto, the act, action</i>	<i>cualquiera, whatever, whichever</i>
<i>el plazo, the term</i>	<i>durar, to last</i>
<i>el corazón, the heart</i>	<i>clavar, to nail</i>
<i>el alimento, the food</i>	<i>elevar, to elevate</i>
<i>el descuido, the neglect</i>	<i>aliviar, to alleviate</i>
<i>las señas, the signs</i>	<i>juzgar, to judge</i>
<i>el atentado, the attempt</i>	<i>aparentar, to seem</i>
<i>la desventura, the misadventure</i>	<i>efectuar, to effect</i>
<i>el marido, the husband</i>	<i>regresar, to return</i>
<i>la ostentación, pomp</i>	<i>resistir, to resist</i>
<i>la educación, education</i>	<i>ofender, to offend</i>
	<i>echar de menos, to miss</i>

suspirar, *to sigh, to crave*
 valer * más, *to be better*
 perder * de vista, *to lose sight of*
 arreglar, *to arrange*
 ganar, *to earn*

obligar, *to oblige*
 respetar, *to respect*
 aguantar, *to put up with*
 cometer, *to commit (make)*
 echar á perder, *to spoil*

EXERCISE 26.

1. Pide que se examine el proceso.
2. Bien venido sea la paz si dura.
3. Desperté de súbito cual se me clavarán un aquijón.
4. Elevo una humilde oración para que se ponga bueno, ó al menos que se alivie.
5. Conviene se presente V. con ostentación pues se juzga de las personas, no por lo que son, sino por lo que aparentan ser.
6. Se dará honrosa colocación á un joven que escriba bien, entienda algo de contabilidad y tenga buenos antecedentes.
7. Esté seguro que todo lo que me lleven (*make me pay*) me parecerá poco.
8. No es posible se efectue este acto en el corto plazo que desea.
9. El que haya marchado no es razón para que tarde en regresar.
10. Mi corazón se resiste á que por mi causa se ofenda á nadie.
11. Es posible que no vuelvas á echar de menos el alimento por que suspiras.
12. Puede que no sea sino el resultado del descuido.
13. La educación es siempre una ventaja para el hombre, cualquiera que sea el modo de obtenerla.

1. I made signs to them to make excuses.
2. It will be better for you to go and remind him of it.
3. I do not think they will dare to make such a cruel attempt.
4. There is no fear that the slightest misadventure will happen to him.
5. I ordered her not to lose sight of him.
6. Unless the work be arranged conveniently one loses time.
7. He who will not work neither shall he eat.
8. The greater part of men often spend their money before they have earned it.
9. Her mamma obliged her to get married.
10. He is my husband, and I want him to be respected and considered.
11. I hope you will let him know (*participar*) if you need his services or not.
12. I fear he may rise and miss us.
13. He was leaving the coachman to do what he thought most suitable.
14. That is no reason why you should stand (*estar de pie*); sit down.
15. There will not be anyone who will put up with him.
16. It would be difficult to find another which would be more suitable (*á propósito*).
17. I beg you not to do any such thing.

LESSON 27.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD (*Continued*).

It will be seen from the foregoing lessons that a verb can govern another verb in the infinitive, indicative, or subjunctive moods. The indicative mood is used for definite actions, facts, and when no doubt exists as to the action of the governed or second verb, and the sub-

subjunctive is used to express all doubtful actions, however remote the doubt may be.

Compare the following examples :—

La paz es el mayor bien que se puede desear.	<i>Peace is the greatest good that can be desired.</i>
Le he dicho que no sabe lo que hace.	<i>I have told him that he does not know what he is doing.</i>
Me dieron aviso de que habian llegado los géneros.	<i>They advised me that the goods had arrived.</i>
Es cierto que han llegado.	<i>It is certain they have arrived.</i>
Diga V. á los que han venido.	<i>Tell those who have come (i.e. I know (am sure) they have come).</i>
Diga V. á los que hayan venido.	<i>Tell those who (may) have come.</i>
Lo creo aunque él me lo niega.	<i>I believe it, although he denies it.</i>
Dudaba que llegara esta semana.	<i>I was doubting that he would arrive this week.</i>
Quiero que vaya V.	<i>I want you to go.</i>
Consiento en que se haga esto.	<i>I consent to this being done.</i>
Le he prohibido que hiciera acción tan ruín.	<i>I have prohibited his doing so mean an action.</i>
Ignoraba de que pensara V. venir este año.	<i>I did not know that you thought of coming this year.</i>

An impersonal verb governs the subjunctive when the second verb has a subject (see Lesson 24).

Es menester que lo compremos en seguida.	<i>It is necessary that we buy it at once.</i>
Es sorprendente que no nos haya escrito.	<i>It is surprising that he has not written to us.</i>
Puede que no nos escriba.	<i>He may not write to us.</i>
Conviene que haga V. esto.	<i>It suits that you do this.</i>

Cuando, referring to an action not accomplished, governs the subjunctive, as :—

Yo le escribiré cuando sepa donde está.

VOCABULARY.

la culpa, <i>the blame</i>	el sacrificio, <i>the sacrifice</i>
el colegio, <i>the college, school</i>	el dueño, <i>the owner</i>
la vida, <i>the life</i>	la dueña, <i>the mistress</i>
el bienhechor, <i>the benefactor</i>	la policía, <i>the police</i>
el gasto, <i>the expense</i>	rigurosamente, <i>rigorously</i>

extraño, *strange*
 cuanto, *all that*
 aún cuando, *even if*
 sin embargo, *nevertheless*
 quizás, *perhaps*
 infeliz, *unhappy*
 desacreditado, *discredited*
 concluir*, *to finish*
 admirarse, *to be surprised*
 vigilar, *to watch*
 dormir*, *to sleep*
 igualar, *to equal*
 socorrer, *to succour*
 escapar, *to escape*

privar, *to deprive*
 exponer*, *to expose*
 comprender, *to comprehend*
 apurar, *to press*
 responder, *to reply*
 agradar, *to please*
 conceder, *to grant*
 caer*, *to fall*
 impedir*, *to prevent*
 suplicar, *to beg*
 permitir, *to allow*
 cesar, *to cease*
 admitir, *to admit*

EXERCISE 27.

1. Los chicos sienten que los vacaciones concluyan.
2. El padre quiere que su hijo reciba buena instrucción.
3. Me admiro de que V. quiera echarme á mí la culpa.
4. Mientras estén en el colegio serán vigilados rigurosamente.
5. Se quedarán allá hasta que se decida de su suerte.
6. ¿Es posible que puedan dormir y que el miedo no les tenga despiertos?
7. No hay alegría que pueda igualarse á la suya.
8. Si tuviera solo un poco de dinero, trabajaría mucho.
9. Quisiera ser rico, y si viera á pobres les socorrería.
10. No es extraño que crea él que es el último dia de su vida.
11. Es difícil que escapemos.
12. ¿Quien me priva de figurarme todo lo que quiera?
13. Se expone V. á que le digan que se equivoca.
14. Me apuró para que le dijese por qué razón estaba tan quejoso de ella.
15. Le respondí que haría cuanto estuviese de mi parte para agradarle.
16. Aún cuando tomara al pie de la letra lo que me dice.
17. No debo permitir que mis bienhechores hagan tantos gastos por mí.
18. No habrá sacrificio, por grande que sea, que deje de hacer por la dueña de esta casa.

1. If she promised to grant me anything I should know what to ask.
2. Granted nevertheless that we obtained that, we might fall ill.
3. Perhaps we should be more unhappy if we were rich.
4. They may be sleeping.
5. It is possible that their parents will put the police on our track (*tras nuestras huellas*).
6. It is better then (*pues*) that we put them in liberty.
7. Who prevents me believing what I like (*se me ocurra*).
8. I am of opinion that you go to Madrid.
9. I want us to make an exchange (*trueque*).
10. If all my companions followed my example we should not be so discredited.
11. We begged them to allow us to pass the night there.
12. I was waiting until the storm ceased to go on (*seguir*) my way.
13. Is it possible that you do not know me?
14. Do you think that the fact that he is poor be a reason for

not admitting him? 15. It is possible you are mistaken and that you do something else. 16. I could not comprehend that you were unhappy.

LESSON 28.

IRREGULAR VERBS.

Excepting the first person of the present indicative (*estoy*), the verb **estar** is only irregular in the past definite and in the tenses formed always from the same.

Ser is irregular in all tenses but the future and conditional indicative.

Haber and **tener** are very similar in the irregularities of their terminations. See list of irregular verbs at the end of the book.

This and the following five exercises are principally for the practice of the irregular verbs.

As already stated, the verb *to be* is translated **estar** when indicating *how* and *where*, **ser** in all other instances, there being very few cases where the student may be in doubt. If in doubt let him ask if *how* or *where* is meant, and if so the proper translation is with **estar**.

A little attention to the rules how to conjugate, and practice, will soon fix the irregular verbs in the memory of the student.

IMPERSONAL VERBS.

Besides what we have said in Lesson 21 we may add that many verbs are real impersonals, or unipersonals, or they are used like **ser**, **parecer**, etc., as impersonal only in the infinitive mood, or the 3rd person singular of all the tenses. Examples:—

Nieva.	<i>It is snowing.</i>
Llueve.	<i>It is raining.</i>
Va á nevar.	<i>It is going to snow.</i>
Hacia mucho frio.	<i>It was very cold.</i>
Hace mucho que no ha venido V.	<i>It is a long time since you came.</i>
Más vale no hacerlo.	<i>It is better not to do it.</i>
Más valdría que fuera así.	<i>It would be better if it were so.</i>
Es de desear que.	<i>It is to be desired that.</i>
Es de notar.	<i>It is to be noted.</i>
Es cierto.	<i>It is certain.</i>
Es verdad.	<i>It is true.</i>
Es vergüenza.	<i>It is a shame.</i>
Es necesario.	<i>It is necessary.</i>
Es menester.	<i>It is needful.</i>

Es bueno.	<i>It is well.</i>
Es propio.	<i>It is proper.</i>
Es sorprendente.	<i>It is surprising.</i>
Es tiempo que.	<i>It is time that.</i>
Es posible.	<i>It is possible.</i>
Es mejor.	<i>It is better.</i>
Es justo.	<i>It is just.</i>
Es lástima.	<i>It is a pity.</i>
Es mentira.	<i>It is a lie (false).</i>
Es una desgracia.	<i>It is a misfortune.</i>
Es triste.	<i>It is sad.</i>
Es una fatalidad.	<i>It is a fatality.</i>
Es horroroso.	<i>It is horrible.</i>
Es inexcusable.	<i>It is inexcusable.</i>
Es una pérdida.	<i>It is a loss.</i>

N.B.—Impersonal verbs govern the subjunctive unless certainty is expressed (Lesson 27).

VOCABULARY.

la tierra, <i>the earth</i>	inaguantable, <i>insupportable</i>
el deber, <i>the duty</i>	aunque, <i>although</i>
la fotografía, <i>the photograph</i>	lluvioso, <i>rainy</i>
la posesión, <i>the possession</i>	honrado, <i>honest</i>
el África Austral, <i>South Africa</i>	incapaz, <i>incapable</i>
el perro, <i>the dog</i>	perverso, <i>perverse</i>
los calzones, <i>the breeches</i>	poseer, <i>to possess</i>
el cómico, <i>the actor</i>	soltar *, <i>to loosen</i>
el peligro, <i>the danger</i>	hacer * frente, <i>to face</i>
la resolución, <i>the resolution</i>	variar, <i>to vary</i>
el cerebro, <i>the brain</i>	poner * en planta, <i>to put in execution</i>
la imagen, <i>the image</i>	tener * inconveniente, <i>to have an objection</i>
el espectador, <i>the spectator</i>	resolver *, <i>to resolve</i>
la mujer, <i>the wife</i>	esperar, <i>to wait, expect</i>
el modo (la manera), <i>the way</i>	constar, <i>to be plain (evident)</i>
la aventura, <i>the adventure</i>	mentir *, <i>to lie</i>
la flaqueza, <i>the weakness</i>	relatar, <i>to relate</i>
digno, <i>worthy</i>	sobrar (impersonal), <i>to have plenty</i>
pequeño, <i>small</i>	
erudito, <i>learned</i>	

EXERCISE 28.

1. ¿Qué hay en la tierra que sea digno de poseerse?
2. Primero está el deber que el placer.
3. Esta fotografía ha sido tomada en una pequeña

ciudad de las posesiones inglesas del Africa Austral. 4. Era una señora erudita é inaguantable. 5. ¡Basta! ¡basta! le dijo al perro, ya te sigo; suelta los calzones é iré donde quieras. 6. No era hombre que quisiera hacer frente al peligro. 7. Si esto ha de ser ¡qué no tarde! 8. El mundo es teatro, cómicos los hombres y á cada momento varía la decoración y el aspecto de los actores. 9. No querer es una cosa, y no tener más remedio que hacerlo es otra. 10. Tengo libros españoles muy difíciles y libros ingleses muy fáciles. 11. Hemos comprado muchos libros y los tenemos azules, verdes, encarnados, amarillos, y negros. 12. Tengo hambre y sed y quiero comer y beber. 13. ¿Ha estudiado V. su lección de español? 14. Sí, Sr, la he estudiado hoy. 15. Poco tuve que esperar para poner en planta mi resolución. 16. Tenemos en el cerebro imágenes llamadas ideas. 17. Le dije que no tenía inconveniente en hacer lo que pedía.

1. You have been our friend always.
2. I have been a spectator of that for a long time.
3. I am (*estoy*) resolved that we do not forget you.
4. Although the day was (*estar*) rainy more than 3000 attended.
5. I have a wife and children waiting for me.
6. It is plain to me (*me consta*) that he is an honest man and incapable of lying.
7. That would be the best way to spoil them.
8. He said that he was a young man of good parts (*prendas*).
9. They were of a perverse nature (*carácter*), and we could no longer put up with them.
10. The place where we are is not suitable to relate adventures.
11. Thanks, my friend, I am not rich, but on this occasion I have plenty of money.
12. To look is one thing and to find (*dar con*) is another.
13. These traits (*rasgos*) of weakness are unworthy of you.
14. Are you cold or warm?
15. We have learned many Spanish words, but we do not speak well.
16. I am not warm; I am very cold.
17. Have you read the newspaper?

LESSON 29.

IRREGULAR VERBS (*Continued*).

Verbs of the first irregularity terminating in *ar* and *er* are conjugated like the regular verbs except in Rule 1, viz. the present indicative and the present subjunctive, in which the *first*, *second* and *third* persons singular, and the *third* person plural take an extra letter (see Lessons 12, 14). The imperative is always the same as the present subjunctive excepting the second persons. Verbs ending in *ir* of this class change also in the present participle, which irregularity is also found in the *third* persons of the past definite.

Querer, *to will, want*, is conjugated as the above, excepting in the past definite and the tenses formed from the same.

The verb *to get* has no exact equivalent in Spanish, and we therefore append a few phrases to show how the same are translated:—

Descomponerse.	<i>To get out of order.</i>
¿ Cómo ganará la vida ?	<i>How will he get his living ?</i>
Nos cogerán (tomarán) la delantera.	<i>They will get the start of us.</i>
No pude obtener otra respuesta.	<i>I could not get any other reply.</i>
Adquirimos } la fortuna con el trabajo. Logramos }	<i>We get fortune with labour.</i>
A alcanzará un empleo.	<i>He will get a situation.</i>
Hice llegar un memorial al consejo.	<i>I got a memorial before the Board.</i>
Hacerse (granjearse) amigos.	<i>To get friends.</i>
Se atraen las simpatías de todo el mundo.	<i>They get the praise of everybody.</i>
No he podido sacarle una palabra.	<i>I have not been able to get a word out of him.</i>
Recibiré una contestación.	<i>I shall get an answer.</i>
No puedo determinarle que lo haga.	<i>I cannot get him to do it.</i>
Persuádale V. que venga por ello.	<i>Get him to come for it.</i>
Ha hecho hacer su retrato.	<i>He has got his portrait taken.</i>
Se restablecerá de su enfermedad.	<i>He will get well of his illness.</i>
Llegar á ser rico.	<i>To get rich.</i>
Se vuelve grueso.	<i>He is getting stout.</i>
Salir bien de una dificultad.	<i>To get out of a difficulty.</i>
Deshacerse de una cosa.	<i>To get rid of a thing.</i>
Quíteselo de la cabeza.	<i>Get that out of your head.</i>

VOCABULARY.

la cólera, *the anger*
 la puente, *the bridge*
 la escalera, *the staircase*
 la juventud, *the youth*
 el baul, *the trunk*
 el piso, *the floor (flat)*
 la tarjeta, *the card (visiting)*
 punto, en, *exactly*
 malo, *wicked*
 posible, *possible*
 acrecentar *, *to increase*

hacer * daño, *to hurt*
 atravesar *, *to cross*
 tropezar *, *to stumble*
 recomendar *, *to recommend*
 confesar *, *to confess*
 sentir (lo) *, *to be sorry*
 plegar *, *to fold*
 arrepentirse, *to repent*
 tener * cuidado * de, *to mind*
 comenzar, *to commence*

EXERCISE 29.

1. Iba acrecentando su cólera.
2. No me apriete V. ; me hace daño.
3. Cada uno sabe donde le aprieta el zapato.
4. Yo creo que está en París.
5. ¿ Cuya es esa pluma que está sobre la mesa ?
6. ¿ Quisiera V. estar en España ?
7. Empezó á comprenderme.
8. Digale V. que empiece,
- 9.

Empezábamos (comenzábamos) á escribir nuestros ejercicios. 10. Quieren empezar. 11. ¿Qué hora es? 12. Son las cuatro. 13. Siempre ha sido V. mi amigo. 14. ¿Cuándo empieza ella? 15. Cerraba la puerta. 16. ¿Quiere V. cerrar la ventana? 17. ¿Qué piensa V. de eso? 18. Ahora atraviesan la puente. 19. Tropezamos al subir la escalera. 20. ¿Me entiende V.? 21. ¿Encendió V. el gas? 22. Ella lo ha perdido. 23. Recomiéndeme V. á él. 24. Siéntese V., que estará cansado. 25. Despiérteme V. á las seis en punto. 26. Confieso que no le había entendido. 27. Sentíamos mucho el saberlo. 28. Lo sentirá V. 29. No consentimos en eso. 30. Queremos ir al teatro esta noche. 31. Quieren empezar ahora mismo. 32. Quiero estudiar español, pero mi padre me recomienda que estudie francés. 33. Tenga V. cuidado de no tropezar en la escalera. 34. ¡Qué hombre tan malo!

1. Have you commenced your work? 2. He is a good man, but he was wicked in his youth. 3. Which is the book that is lost? 4. Do you think he is rich? 5. Her mother is old and sometimes she is sad. 6. He is a doctor. 7. Where was the invoice? 8. The trunk was broken. 9. I should be happy if I were in Spain. 10. Have you ever been there? 11. If I were rich I would go there. 12. Why do you not begin? 13. I do not want to begin. 14. Begin now. 15. May I close the door? 16. Yes, close it. 17. Are the pieces folded? 18. No; please have them folded. 19. I should be sorry if they lost it. 20. Why do they not sit down? 21. I am very sorry. 22. If they were sorry they would repent. 23. Where did he lose it? 24. What does she want? 25. She wants to come with us. 26. He would not shut the door. 27. If she wanted to go she would go. 28. They were crossing the bridge. 29. What would you like to have? 30. I should like to have some new books. 31. Mind you do not stumble. 32. He has an office in Market Street, third floor, to the right. 33. Please give him my card. 34. I will come to-morrow if it is possible.

LESSON 30.

IRREGULAR VERBS (*Continued*).

The irregular verbs of the second class alter in the same persons as those of the first class, the **o** of the root being changed to **ue**.

Poder has the same irregularities as the above, and has irregular also the whole of the past definite and the present participle.

Dormir has the same irregularities as **poder**, except that in the past definite only the third persons (not the whole tense) are irregular.

Morir is like **poder**, but has also irregular the past participle, **muerto**.

Notice that all verbs ending in **olver** have an irregular past participle ending **uelto**: *volver, vuelto*.

The English verb *to become* has no exact equivalent in Spanish, and the student is therefore requested to notice how it is translated in the following sentences :—

Se ha hecho comerciante.	<i>He has become a merchant.</i>
¿ Qué se ha hecho de su Sr. hermano ?	<i>What has become of your brother ?</i>
¿ Qué será de él ?	<i>What will become of him ?</i>
Esa levita no le va bien.	<i>That coat does not become you.</i>
Quiere meterse á soldado.	<i>He wants to become a soldier.</i>
Ha sentado plaza.	<i>He has become a soldier.</i>
No le conviene obrar de este modo.	<i>It does not become you to act so.</i>
El azúcar se ha convertido en agua.	<i>The sugar has become liquid.</i>
Ese lenguaje no es propio de V.	<i>That language does not become you.</i>
¿ Qué le sucederá á V. si pierde su dinero ?	<i>What will become of you if you lose your money ?</i>
Salió actor afamado.	<i>He became a famous actor.</i>
Á esta noticia quedó muy afligida.	<i>On hearing this she became very sad.</i>

VOCABULARY.

una sentencia, *a sentence*
 el niño, *the child*
 desde, *from*
 hasta, *to*
 muerto, *dead (died)*
 la seda, *the silk*
 mover*, *to move*
 contar*, *to count, to relate*

acordarse * de, *to remember*
 estar * de vuelta, *to be back*
 morir *, *to die*
 formar, *to form*
 costar *, *to cost*
 dormir *, *to sleep*
 alegrarse de, *to be glad*

EXERCISE 30.

1. Yo no muevo.
2. ¿ Dónde le encuentra V. ?
3. Está lloviendo.
4. ¿ No los contaba V. ?
5. Que vuelva él á casa.
6. Volverán á las nueve y media.
7. ¿ Porqué no vuelven los criados ?
8. Haga V. el favor de mostrárnoslos.
9. ¿ Puede V. traérmelos mañana ?
10. Me duele la cabeza.
11. Suele venir cada dia á las once dc la mañana.
12. ¿ No se acuerda V. de mí ?
13. ¿ No lo ha encontrado V. ?
14. Dígale V. que se lo devuelva.
15. Suéltele V.
16. ¿ A qué hora se acuesta V. ?
17. No puedo hacerlo.
18. Se lo mostraba cuando V. entró.
19. No vuelva V. á hacerlo.
20. No se le vuelva V. á mostrar.
21. Creo que no se acordará de nosotros.
22. ¿ A qué hora estará de vuelta ?
23. Suele volver entre las seis y las siete.
24. Ya no truena.
25. Ha muerto en la flor de su edad.
26. Acuéstese V. temprano.
27. Cuénteme V. lo que le dijo.
28. V. puede hablar pero yo no lo puedo.
29. Todo pudiera suceder,
30. Sin los verbos

no se puede formar ni una sola sentencia. 31. ¿ Cuánto ha costado el vestido de seda ?

1. Do they move ? 2. How much does it cost ? 3. Show it to us.
4. Does it rain ? 5. Let us return home. 6. If I meet her. 7. I will speak to her. 8. I will show them to you with much pleasure. 9. Let us go and meet him. 10. He has toothache. 11. They do not remember us. 12. The child is sleeping. 13. He sleeps generally from two until four o'clock. 14. Your friend is (has) dead. 15. He has already returned it to you. 16. We go to bed at ten o'clock. 17. Ask him if he will show them to me. 18. I shall be glad if you will show it to him. 19. Do you think it will rain ? 20. I shall show it to her to-morrow. 21. Write to him again. 22. Have you returned it to them ? 23. Do you think that he will come back to-day ? 24. Do you think, perchance, that I will not return it to you ? 25. Would you do it if you could ? 26. Shall we go to meet them ? 27. Can you send it to them ? 28. I wish I could send it to them. 29. He returned more than a year ago.

LESSON 31.

IRREGULAR VERBS (*Continued*).

Andar is irregular only in Rule 3, having the same terminations as **tener**.

Caber is irregular in Rules 1, 3, and 4.

Caer is only irregular in the 1st person of the present indicative and the tenses formed from same (Lesson 13).

Conducir is irregular in Rules 1 and 3.

It is perhaps well to remind the student again of the use of **haber** impersonal, as shown in the following sentences :—

Hubo tiempo en que.	<i>There was a time in which.</i>
Había diez en la clase.	<i>There were ten in the class.</i>
¿ Cuántos chelines hay en la libra ?	<i>How many shillings are there in the £ ?</i>
Ha habido un accidente.	<i>There has been an accident.</i>
¿ Ha habido mucha fruta este año ?	<i>Has there been much fruit this year ?</i>
Hay neblina.	<i>It is foggy.</i>
Hay luna.	<i>The moon is shining.</i>

We will give from time to time useful idioms, which the student is advised to learn by heart.

Al fin y al cabo.	<i>In the long run.</i>
Eso está más allá de mis alcances.	<i>That is above me.</i>

Eso es echar aceite á la llama.	<i>That is making things worse.</i>
No nos ha echado de menos.	<i>He has not missed us.</i>
Comprar al contado.	<i>To buy for cash.</i>
Fué un desliz de la lengua.	<i>It was a slip of the tongue.</i>
La necesidad carece de ley.	<i>Necessity has no law.</i>
Lo barato siempre es caro.	<i>Cheap things turn out the dearest.</i>
Echar á correr.	<i>To run away.</i>
Echar á uno á pasear.	<i>To send one about his business.</i>

VOCABULARY.

la red, <i>the net</i>	la ira, <i>the wrath</i>
el cuerpo, <i>the body</i>	la venganza, <i>the vengeance</i>
la salud, <i>the health</i>	la industria, <i>the industry</i>
el temor, <i>the fear</i>	la agricultura, <i>the agriculture</i>
la explicación, <i>the explanation</i>	perfecto, <i>perfect</i>
la vanidad, <i>the vanity</i>	claro, <i>clear</i>
el sillón, <i>the armchair</i>	humano, <i>human</i>
el pecho, <i>the breast</i>	poderoso, <i>powerful</i>
la esperanza, <i>the hope</i>	ligero, <i>quickly, light</i>
la suerte, <i>the fortune, lot</i>	andar *, <i>to go</i>
la riña, <i>the quarrel</i>	caber *, <i>to hold, contain, to be able to be contained</i>
la sala, <i>the hall, parlour</i>	rebosar, <i>to abound</i>
el monte, <i>the hill</i>	empeñar, <i>to pledge</i>
la ceremonia, <i>the ceremony</i>	empeñarse, <i>to insist, persist</i>
el pulso, <i>the pulse</i>	dar * cabida, <i>to give room</i>
el huésped, <i>the guest</i>	mediar, <i>to mediate</i>
el cumplimiento, <i>the compliment</i>	conducir *, <i>to conduct</i>
la satisfacción, <i>the satisfaction</i>	exceptuar, <i>to except</i>
el tranvía, <i>the tram</i>	divertirse *, <i>to amuse</i>
el corazón, <i>the heart</i>	
la malevolencia, <i>the malevolence</i>	

EXERCISE 31.

1. Cayó en la red como yo había caido.
2. El reloj no anda.
3. Solo en un cuerpo fuerte y limpio cabe salud perfecta.
4. El pobre se cayó.
5. Claro es que donde rebosa el amor no cabe el temor.
6. ¿Á qué fin empeñarme en querer referir lo que no cabe en ninguna explicación?
7. Si se parece á V. aprenderá cuanto quepa en cabeza humana.
8. Á las ocho estará mi equipaje en su alcoba.
9. ¿Caben dos camas?
10. Soy rico, poderoso, pero nunca daré cabida á la vanidad.
11. No podrá tomar posesión del sillón presidencial porque no cabe.
12. No puedo ser feliz, ni aún dar cabida en mi pecho á una sola esperanza.

siempre suele caber al que media en riñas de casados. 13. Por poco no me caigo. 14. Lo dejo caer en la conversación. 15. Las ventanas caen al río. 16. Yo le conduje á la sala. 17. Sobre todo me ha quedado en la cabeza el día en que anduvimos por los montes de Guipuzcoa. 18. Ya sabe V. que conmigo no hay que andar con ceremonias. 19. Aún anda el pulso un poco ligero. 20. No andemos ahora con cumplimientos. 21. Quiero que le conduzca aquí.

1. It could hold comfortably up to 20 horses. 2. I have (*caber*) the satisfaction of knowing that it is not possible to do more in his favour (*obsequio*). 3. When the train was going (*andar*) again. 4. Have you no heart, or do you only shelter (*dar cabida*) in it malevolence, wrath and vengeance? 5. There is no doubt (*caber*) that the mineral industry is the most important in Spain if agriculture is excepted. 6. As many guests came (*acudir*) as so small a room (*reducida pieza*) could hold. 7. The servant let it fall. 8. It is necessary to conform to (*andar con*) the times. 9. Without doubt (*caber*) you have upset (*echar á perder*) the stomach with something. 10. Here is the borrowed watch which really goes very well. 11. That you may return happily and amuse yourself is all I can desire. 12. Please conduct him to the drawing-room. 13. I saw him fall. 14. What a pity that he has not come! 15. Does your watch go well? 16. No, it loses (*atrasar*) a little. 17. If he comes tell him about it.

LESSON 32.

IRREGULAR VERBS (*Continued*).

Conocer is only irregular in the 1st person of the present indicative and in the tenses formed from same.

Its meaning is to know *by the senses*, to be acquainted with.

Dar is irregular in the 1st person of the present indicative, and in the whole of the past definite.

Hacer is irregular in Rules 1, 3, and 4.

Ir, to go, is used for *to go to a definite place*. **Andar** translates *to go* when speaking only of movement. Compare the following phrases:—

El tren andaba otra vez.

The train was going again.

El pulso anda un poco ligero.

The pulse is beating rather fast.

El reloj no anda bien.

The watch does not go well.

Había andado siempre medio desnudo,

He had always been half dressed without shoes and good clothing.

sin zapatos y sin ropa buena.

Andaba la niña velozmente como
quien va á algún sitio determinado
y le urge llegar pronto.

The girl was walking quickly like one going to some determined place with urgent reasons.

Sobre una mesa andan unos ágiles dedos armados de aguja hilvanando arriba y abajo una tela negra.

Idioms :—

Le pagará á plazos.	<i>He will pay you by instalments.</i>
Hacer frente á.	<i>To face.</i>
Lo tengo por escrito.	<i>I have it in writing.</i>
Coger agua en cesto.	<i>To labour in vain.</i>
Decirlo á las claras.	<i>To tell it plainly.</i>
En resumidas cuentas.	<i>In short.</i>
Es un hombre liso y llano.	<i>He is a plain-dealing man.</i>
Tomarlo á pecho.	<i>To take to heart.</i>
Dicho y hecho.	<i>No sooner said than done.</i>

VOCABULARY.

el organista, <i>the organist</i>	la amenaza, <i>the threat</i>
la enhorabuena, <i>the felicitation</i>	jamás, <i>ever</i>
la canasta, <i>the basket</i>	igual, <i>equal</i>
la obligación, <i>the obligation, duty</i>	campo raso, <i>open country</i>
la tempestad, <i>the storm</i>	caliente, <i>warm</i>
la soberbia, <i>the pride</i>	común, <i>common</i>
La América del sud, <i>South America</i>	cumplir, <i>to discharge, keep</i>
el cebo, <i>the bait</i>	sentar *, <i>to lie, to fit</i>
el anzuelo, <i>the hook</i>	servir *, <i>to serve, to be of use</i>
la paciencia, <i>the patience</i>	conformar, <i>to conform</i>
la honra } <i>the honour</i>	mandar á pasear, <i>to send about one's business</i>
el honor }	

EXERCISE 32.

1. ¿ Conoce V. á España ? 2. ¿ Conoce V. á un hombre que sepa el español ? 3. Conocemos lo buenos que son ellos. 4. ¿ Sabe V. quién le conoce ? 5. ¿ Dónde le conoció Vd. ? 6. ¿ Cuándo conoció Vd. al organista ? 7. Conociéndola le amará V. 8. Digale V. que me los dé. 9. Le doy á V. las gracias. 10. ¿ Qué tiempo hace ? 11. ¿ Cuánto tiempo hace que no ve V. á su hermano ? 12. ¿ Qué hacía V. cuando le ví en la tienda ? 13. Desearía conocer á la Sta. que acaba de salir. 14. Vaya V. á darle la enhorabuena. 15. ¿ Se lo ha dado V. ? 16. Si se lo hubiera dado á ella me lo habría manifestado. 17. ¿ Qué se ha hecho del libro ? 18. ¿ Le he hecho jamás algún mal á V. ? 19. ¿ Qué hace la criada con la canasta ? 20. Le ofrecí emplear igual esmero en cumplir con mi obligación. 21. Á eso de (*about*) media noche me cogió en campo raso una fuerte tempestad. 22. No haga V. caso de lo que dice mi hija. 23. La soberbia sienta mal hasta en los grandes.

1. Where did you make his acquaintance ? 2. How did you become acquainted with that lady ? 3. Did you give the newspaper to him ? 4. Is it hot in South America ? 5. I did not know you when I saw you in the street. 6. When will you give it to him ? 7. What would she say if you gave it to her ? 8. I told him to give them to them. 9. He would not give them to us. 10. Give this letter to your father when he comes. 11. Will he give him his books ? 12. The water is warm. 13. Give it back to him. 14. Whom are you calling "common people" ? 15. You can take a turn (*dar una vuelta*) and then come back. 16. He only looks at the bait and does not fear the hook. 17. At the end of this time I lost patience. 18. At the end (*al final*) of the street and on the footpath (*acera*) at the left you will find it. 19. Wait ; I will send word (*pasar recado*) to the lady. 20. I do not know the town very well. 21. It is of no use his coming to me with threats. 22. He will have to conform to his mother's orders. 23. Return home at once, your sister is ill. 24. How long were you in Andalusia ? 25. Do you know anyone who knows him ? 26. I should like to make the acquaintance of that lady. 27. There is no honour in that. 28. Don't take any notice of him. 29. Tell him to go about his business.

LESSON 33.

Pedir and the Verbs of the same class are irregular in Rules 1 and 3, changing the e of the root to i.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

In English the relative *that* is often disregarded, but cannot be omitted in Spanish. Examples :—

La carta que V. ha recibido. *The letter you have received.*

In English the relative clause sometimes ends ungrammatically in a preposition, but this is not possible in Spanish, e.g. :—

La ciudad en que vive. *The city he lives in.*

¿Qué busca V.? *What are you looking for?*

Quién refers to persons only and is always preceded by a when governed by a verb.

El hombre a quien V. mandó tra- *The man whom you ordered to work.*

Que, *who*, *that*, *which*, is invariable, and may refer to persons or things.

¿ De quién es el retrato que me envió V.? *Whose is the portrait you sent me?*

Los libros que están sobre la mesa. *The books that are on the table.*

El discípulo que estudia. *The pupil who studies.*

Who is translated by **que** unless governed by a preposition referring to persons, as :—

El hombre que trabaja.

The man who works.

El edificio en que (or en el cual) estábamos ayer.

The building in which we were yesterday.

¿ Quién es el Sr. con quien habló V. ayer ?

Who is the gentleman with whom you spoke yesterday ?

¿ A quién se lo ha comprado V. ?

From whom have you bought it ?

A second relative is often translated **cual** with the article, as :—

El muchacho que vino ayer y al cual habló Vd.

The boy that came yesterday and to whom you spoke.

El libro que le dió V. y en el cual estudia.

The book you gave him and in which he studies.

Cuyo, which always agrees with the noun following, refers to persons or things, as :—

La señora cuyo hijo acaba de llegar.

The lady whose son has just arrived.

El caballero cuyo caballo compró Vd.

The gentleman whose horse you bought.

He who, those who, are translated by the definite article with **que**, as :—

El que no estudia no aprende.

He who does not study does not learn.

Los que han venido no están contentos de lo que hemos dicho.

Those who have come are not pleased with what we have said.

If the relative refers not to a single word but to a whole sentence, **que** or **cual** is used, preceded by **lo**, as :—

No ha vuelto & escribirle, lo que le contraria mucho.

He has not written to her again which annoys her much.

Yo le di todo lo que me pidió, lo que le gustó mucho.

I gave him all he asked, which pleased him much.

Cuanto, variable, translates *all that, as much as*, as :—

El maestro & quién he visto me ha dado cuantos informes deseaba.

The teacher I have seen has given me all the information I desired.

VOCABULARY.

la disposición, *the disposal*
 la culpa, *the fault*
 el humor, *the humour*
 el diseño, *the design*
 la necesidad, *the necessity*
 agradable, *agreeable*
 desgraciado, *unfortunate*
 verosímil, *likely*
 descontento, *displeased*
 agradecer *, { *to be obliged to*
 to thank
 ofrecer *, *to offer*

persuadir, *to persuade*
 reirse de *, *to laugh at*
 repetir *, *to repeat*
 vestirse *, *to dress*
 elegir *, *to select*
 obedecer *, *to obey*
 impedir *, *to prevent*
 teñir *, *to dye*
 despachar, *to despatch*
 medir *, *to measure*
 conceder, *to grant*

EXERCISE 33.

1. ¿Quién está ahí? 2. ¿Habla V. francés? 3. ¿De que sirve eso?
4. ¿A quién tengo el honor de hablar? 5. Le agradaría esto. 6. ¿En qué puedo ser á V. agradable? 7. ¿Qué puedo ofrecer á V.? 8. Pida V. lo que quiera. 9. Todo cuanto tengo está á la disposición de V. 10. Esté V. persuadido de que no es culpa mia. 11. Hubiera querido poder hacer más. 12. Me ha prestado uno de esos servicios que jamás se olvidan. 13. Me alegra mucho de haber podido complacer á V. 14. Creo que tiene V. razón. 15. Es muy desgraciado. 16. Está V. de mal humor. 17. ¿De qué se rie V.? 18. Me corregía todos los días. 19. Repítamelo V. 20. Deje V. de reir y vistase pronto. 21. ¿Porqué no les corrigen Vds.? 22. Estos son los diseños que han elegido. 23. Se rien de nosotros. 24. El me lo pidió. 25. Si me corrigiera no le obedecería. 26. Si se lo repitiera á él no lo olvidaría. 27. Vamos á pedírselo. 28. Quisieron pedírnoslo. 29. Me lo pedía cuando entró V. 30. Si lo deseara se lo pediría. 31. Si tuviera necesidad de eso, ¿pórqué no pedírselo?

1. Who are you? 2. What do you desire? 3. Have you need of anything? 4. Can you get me what I ask? 5. I cannot refuse you anything. 6. I am much obliged to you. 7. I will never forget what you have done for me. 8. What do you advise me? 9. I tell you it is true. 10. I can assure you of it. 11. That is not true. 12. It is likely enough. 13. There is nothing impossible. 14. That is very sad. 15. I am greatly (*muy*) displeased with you. 16. Please take a seat. 17. Please follow him. 18. If he does wrong correct him. 19. What has he done to prevent it? 20. She was dyeing a dress. 21. They were laughing at us. 22. Despatch the goods to-day. 23. It is they who despatch the goods. 24. They repeat these truths to us daily. 25. Prevent them doing it (subj.). 26. Who

measures the cloth ? 27. He asked me for something I could not grant him. 28. If you asked for it you would get it (*conseguir*). 29. He would not make these errors if he were corrected. 30. Repeat it to them. 31. What did they ask for ? 32. They did not ask for anything.

LESSON 34.

IRREGULAR VERBS.

Saber is irregular in Rules 1, 3, and 4. The terminations, excepting the 1st person present indicative, are like the verb **caber**. **Como** (*how*) is only used with **saber** when the following verb refers to a different object, as :—

No sé como puede hacerlo.	<i>I don't know how he can do it.</i>
No sé patinar.	<i>I don't know how to skate.</i>
¿ Sabe V. bailar ?	<i>Do you know how to dance ?</i>

Saber á means *to taste of*.

Poner is irregular in Rules 1, 3, and 4. **Salir** and **valer** in 1 and 4.

INTERROGATIVES.

Qué, *what*; **quién**, *who*; **cuál**, *which*; **cuánto**, *how much*; **de quién**, *whose*; **cuyo**, *whose*; **cómo**, *how*; **dónde**, *where*; **cuándo**, *when*.

All these pronouns and adverbs carry the accent mark when used interrogatively. Examples :—

¿ Qué es esto ?	<i>What is this ?</i>
¿ Qué hacia V. ?	<i>What were you doing ?</i>
¿ Cuántos hijos tiene su amigo de V. ?	<i>How many children has your friend ?</i>
¿ Cuál libro ha escogido V. ?	<i>Which book have you chosen ?</i>
¿ De quién es esta casa ?	<i>Whose house is this ?</i>
¿ Cuyo es esto ?	<i>Whose is this ?</i>

Note that **cuyo** agrees in gender and number with the noun, and is immediately followed by the verb, its meaning interrogatively being **de quién**.

¿ Cuál es el mejor modo de aprender el español ?	<i>Which is the best way of learning Spanish ?</i>
¿ Cómo pasaron Vds. el tiempo en el campo ?	<i>How did you pass your time in the country ?</i>
¿ Cuándo se lo envió V. ?	<i>When did you send it to him ?</i>
¿ Dónde vive esa señora ?	<i>Where does that lady live ?</i>
¿ Hasta cuándo piensa V. quedar en Roma ?	<i>How long do you think of staying in Rome ?</i>

¿ De dónde viene ese Sr. ?
 ¿ A dónde va su Sr. padre ?
 ¿ Cuánto hace que están aquí ?

Whence comes that gentleman ?
Where is your father going ?
How long have they been here ?

VOCABULARY.

la uva, *the grape*
 la gallina, *the hen*
 el concierto, *the concert*
 el telegrama, *the telegram*
 las señas, } *the address*
 la dirección }
 dentro de, *within*
 tal, *such*
 pálido, *pale*
 pronto, *soon*

no valer * la pena, *not to be worth*
 while
 saber á *, *to taste of*
 por lo que yo sepa, *as far as I know*
 hasta el último penique, *every penny*
 poner un telegrama, *to send a tele-
 gram*
 trabar cono- } *to make*
 cimiento } *to scrape* } *acquaintance*

EXERCISE 34.

1. No sé cómo puede hacer tal cosa.
2. ¿ Sabe V. el francés ?
3. ¿ Sabe V. quién pasó por aquí ayer ?
4. ¿ Sabe V. lo que ha hecho el chico ?
5. ¿ Cuándo piensa V. salir ?
6. ¿ Cuándo salieron sus sres hermanos ?
7. Sabemos lo mucho que nos quiere.
8. ¿ Sabía V. que iba á venir ?
9. ¿ Dónde ha puesto el equipaje ?
10. ¿ Cuánto valen las uvas ?
11. ¿ Cuánto vale el precio de esto ?
12. Digale que cuando llegue me ponga un telegrama.
13. Ella se puso pálida.
14. No vale la pena de hacerse.
15. ¿ Salió ella temprano de casa ?
16. Sali antes que mi hermano.
17. Esta gallina no pone (*lays*) huevos.
18. Hace cinco años que salí de España.
19. ¿ Sabe V. que el criado ha ido por pan ?
20. ¿ Dónde quisiera V. que lo pusieramos ?
21. ¿ Saldrá V. muy pronto para España ?
22. ¿ Sabe V. quién conoce á ese hombre ?
23. Lo supieron hace tres días.
24. Quiero que salga mañana.
25. Me dijo que no quiso que saliera antes del viernes.
26. ¿ Cuánto hace que salió ?

1. Do you know German ?
2. Do you know how to play the piano ?
3. Did you know your lessons yesterday ?
4. When do you start for Paris ?
5. Better late (*más vale*) than never.
6. Do you know how to read ?
7. Do you know whether (*si*) he speaks French ?
8. Do they know that their friends are going to give a reception ?
9. He does not know anything.
10. Tell him to put it in my office.
11. The coffee will get cold (*ponerse*).
12. Did you leave the concert before us ?
13. Do you know how he does this ?
14. I am starting for Spain in (*dentro de*) five days.
15. He expects to leave Madrid on the 15th instant (*corriente*).
16. Do you know your brother's address (*dirección de la casa*) ?
17. Does he know that we know him ?
18. Do you know which are the longest months ?
19. Do they know

what their friends have promised them ? 20. If I knew it I would tell you. 21. Am I not as good (*valer*) as he ? 22. They sent (*poner*) me a telegram from Málaga. 23. Will he know how to do it ? 24. Do you know Spain ? 25. This water tastes of soap. 26. He has not come, so far as I know. 27. He has spent every penny he had. 28. If he wanted to start then why did he not do so ? 29. He wanted to make their acquaintance.

LESSON 35.

OBSERVATIONS ON PREPOSITIONS.

A preposition is a word used with a noun or pronoun to show its relation to some other word in the sentence, as :—

He is in (en) the water.

He walked about (por) the park.

He fell off (de) the ladder.

As regards **por** and **para** see Lessons 14 and 36.

Desde marks a starting point :—

Desde la juventud. *From youth.*

Vengo desde Londres y voy hasta Glasgow. *I come from London and I am going to Glasgow.*

De is used in all cases to denote possession, see Lesson 1. **De** is sometimes used differently to English, as illustrated in the following phrases :—

La niña de los ojos negros. *The girl with the black eyes.*

Hacía las veces de padre. *I was acting in place of the father.*

Es la casa más bonita de la ciudad. *It is the nicest house in town.*

La mejor casa de la calle. *The best house in the street.*

A and **de** form locutions which are better learned by practice. A good dictionary will contain these locutions. Examples :—

á sabiendas	<i>knowingly</i>
de noche	<i>by night</i>
de miedo	<i>for fear</i>
á pie	<i>on foot</i>

En is used for **á** when it refers to entrance into any place :—

He estado en el teatro. *I have been to the theatre.*

Mi hermano no está en casa. *My brother is not at home.*

En is used instead of **á** in phrases like the following :—

de día en día *from day to day*

de semana en semana *from week to week*

Towards, referring to persons, is translated **para con**.

Debemos portarnos bien para con todo el mundo. *We ought to behave well towards everybody.*

Es cortés para con todos. *He is courteous to everybody.*

The following always govern **de** before verbs and nouns :—

antes delante dentro después encima

Idioms :—

Lo hice de mi propio acuerdo.

I did it on my own accord.

Paso á paso va lejos.

Slow and sure wins the race.

Tiempo y hora no se ata con soga.

Time and tide wait for no man.

Dar una indirecta.

To give a hint.

Le toca á V. leer.

It is your turn to read.

VOCABULARY.

la bicicleta, *the cycle*

descompuesto, *out of order*

el escritorio, *the office*

todos los } *every*

el sobreescrito, *the envelope*

todas las } *every*

la debilidad, *the weakness*

cada dia }

el gabinete, *the sitting-room*

diariamente } *daily*

la maravilla, *the marvel*

de ello, *about it.*

la semana pasada, *last week*

cuidar, *to take care*

capaz, *capable*

desear, *to wish*

EXERCISE 35.

1. ¿ De dónde viene su amigo de V.? 2. Quiere ver las bicicletas. 3. Ya las hemos visto. 4. ¿ Les vió él á las niñas? 5. Está en su escritorio ; ¿ quiere V. verle? 6. ¿ Quién quiere traerme el periódico? 7. Se lo traeré yo. 8. ¿ A qué viene V. á la corte? 9. Cuando veas á un señor lo preguntas que si sabe dónde vive la persona de quien habla el sobreescrito. 10. Grande era la debilidad de su cansada vista (*sight—eyes*). 11. Otra cosa podía verse desde cualquier parte de aquel gabinete. 12. Parece imposible que un hombre sea capaz de fabricar tal maravilla. 13. Si viene á cuidarlo no se echará á perder. 14. Este reloj está descompuesto. 15. Le he dicho que me lo trajera. 16. Traígáselo V. en seguida. 17. Le ha visto V. muchas veces. 18. Se lo diré cuando le vea. 19. ¿ Cuándo dijo que vendría? 20. Le dije que se los trajese, pero no quiso traerlos. 21. Vaya V. á ver quién ha venido. 22. Ya voy (*coming!*). 23. ¿ Cuándo piensan venir? 24. Vinieron la semana pasada. 25. Dijeron que volverían á venir dentro de quince días. 26. Nos lo trajeron anteayer. 27. Qué me lo traiga ella.

1. I wish to see her and speak to her. 2. We have not seen him, but we wish to see him. 3. Do you see what time it is by (*en*) the church clock?

4. Ask him to bring it to me. 5. Does he bring the newspaper each day? 6. He is coming to see you to-morrow morning. 7. I told him not to come until I wrote. 8. What has he come for? 9. Why did they not come yesterday? 10. They would not come when I asked them. 11. Would you like to come with me? 12. Bring your books with you. 13. Didst thou come yesterday? 14. I used to see him every day. 15. If I saw him I should tell him what I think of it. 16. She brought it to me last night. 17. I did not bring it with me. 18. I see these friends every week. 19. Do you know how to do it? 20. Does she know how to speak Spanish? 21. He came to see her daily. 22. What do they know about it? 23. They saw us last week. 24. If they brought them to us we would not accept them. 25. Such a thing seems impossible. 26. She said her watch was out of order. 27. Let him bring it.

LESSON 36.

Por (Lesson 14) is used with meanings other than *for*, as will be seen in the following idiomatic sentences :—

Los consideraba por mejores.	<i>I considered them to be better.</i>
Este señor pasa por caritativo.	<i>This gentleman is considered to be charitable.</i>
Pasa por docto.	<i>He is considered to be a learned man.</i>
Por navidad.	<i>At Christmas.</i>
Por la mañana, tarde, etc.	<i>In the morning, evening, etc.</i>
Lo hizo para no pasar por insensible.	<i>He did it so as not to be regarded as unfeeling.</i>
Echar por tierra.	<i>To throw on the ground.</i>
Por orden alfabético.	<i>In alphabetic order.</i>
Por más que diga no le creeré.	<i>Whatever he says I will not believe him.</i>
Por compulsión.	<i>Through compulsion.</i>
Estoy por salir.	<i>I am inclined (in favour of) to go out.</i>
Por rico que sea.	<i>However rich he be.</i>
Las peras están por madurar.	<i>The pears are not yet ripe.</i>
Por tener que asistir á las fiestas.	<i>Through having to go to the feast (fair).</i>
Por supuesto.	<i>Of course.</i>
Hasta ahora la tengo por fregar el primer plato.	<i>I have not yet seen her scrub a plate.</i>

Before an infinitive *to*, meaning *in order to*, is translated **para** :—

Vino para verles.

He came to see them.

Estudio para aprender.

I study to learn.

Use **para** for destination of objects (Lesson 14).

„ „ to translate *in order to* before infinitives.

„ „ to express determinate tense, as :—

Lo dejaremos para mañana.

We will leave it for to-morrow.

Para San Juan iré á España.

I will go to Spain by St. John's day.

Use **para** for relation of things with others :—

Para principiante no lo hizo mal.

For a beginner he did not do it badly.

Para el tiempo que hace no está

*For the weather we have the country
is not backward.*

atrasado el campo

Use **para** to translate *about to* :—

Estoy para hacerlo.

I am about to do it.

Por is used in all other cases.

Examples of **para** used idiomatically or where difficulty may be experienced :—

El chico es pequeño para su edad.

The boy is small for his age.

Para ser tan buen músico no ha tocado bien.

For such a good musician he has not played well.

Para mí creo.

For me, as to me, I think.

Es hombre para todo.

He can do anything.

No sirve para nada.

It is good for nothing.

Se lo enviaré para navidad.

I will send it by Christmas.

Tengo para mí.

My opinion is.

El oficial leyó el parte para sí.

The official read the report to himself (in private).

¿ Quién es V. para con su primo ?

Who are you in comparison with your cousin ?

No le ha pagado el sombrero para lo que vale.

He has not paid for the hat what it is worth.

Estamos para salir.

We are ready (about) to go out.

Estoy para acabar.

I shall have done just now.

Es difícil para aprendido de memoria.

It is difficult to get off by heart.

Para entre amigos son excusados los cumplimientos.

Compliments between friends are unnecessary.

VOCABULARY.

la navidad, *Christmas*

la tierra, *the earth, ground*

la compulsión, *the compulsion*

la pera, *the pear*

el principiante, <i>the beginner</i>	demás, <i>rest, remainder</i>
el músico, <i>the musician</i>	por aquí, <i>this way</i>
el parte, <i>the report</i>	excusado, <i>unnecessary</i>
la memoria, <i>the memory</i>	delicioso, <i>delicious</i>
los cumplimientos, <i>compliments</i>	célebre } renowned
la región, <i>the region, district</i>	afamado }
el vidriero, <i>the glazier</i>	despedirse *, <i>to bid good-bye</i>
el forastero, <i>the stranger</i>	alquilar, <i>to let, hire</i>
la mentira, <i>the lie</i>	pelear, <i>to fight</i>
caritativo, <i>charitable</i>	madurar, <i>to mature</i>
docto, <i>learned</i>	tocar, <i>to touch, to play an instrument</i>
insensible, <i>unfeeling</i>	supuesto, <i>supposed</i>
para con, <i>compared with</i>	por supuesto, <i>of course</i>

EXERCISE 36.

1. ¿Por quién me toma V.? 2. Déjale V. para quien es. 3. Por lo demás es imposible decidirlo ahora. 4. ¿Por dónde va V.? 5. Pase V. por aquí. 6. Hacia muchos sacrificios por ella. 7. Pagó mil libras por su casa. 8. Es excusado decir que no he pagado tanto por la mía. 9. Ha traído una bicicleta nueva para V. 10. Estudia para médico. 11. Esta región es deliciosa por sus frutas. 12. Le doy á V. mi libro por el suyo. 13. El niño es pequeño para su edad. 14. ¿Cuánto pide V. por ese sombrero? 15. Le daria mi lapiz por su pluma de V. 16. ¿Ha enviado V. por el vidriero? 17. Se ha despedido para siempre. 18. Todo hombre debería trabajar para su familia. 19. Envíe V. por pan y vino. 20. ¿Por quién pregunta el forastero? 21. Puede V. tomarlo por concedido. 22. ¿Puede V. darme un cuarto por esta noche? 23. Estoy por no hacerlo. 24. Le hablé por una hora. 25. Las casas están para alquilar. 26. ¿Por qué ha enviado V.? 27. Trabajo para ganar la vida.

1. Have you asked him for it? 2. I punished him for having told me a lie. 3. I start to-morrow for Spain. 4. I have not seen you for a year. 5. I believe she would give her life for him if it were necessary. 6. They asked us for it last week. 7. He paid sixty pounds for the horse. 8. The postman has brought a letter for you. 9. The boy is very tall for his age. 10. The money is for the poor. 11. I have given him my dictionary for his grammar. 12. For what is this country noted? 13. It is every man's duty to fight for his country. 14. Do you go for the cigars? 15. Bring me writing paper. 16. It has been a great loss for them. 17. He has bidden me farewell for ever. 18. I shall write to you at Christmas. 19. In order to please one must be amiable. 20. I am for going to Paris. 21. The

house is ready for letting. 22. For how much did you sell it? 23. For whom has he made them? 24. Do they want to send for anything? 25. What is it for? 26. Will you give me that for this? 27. For what is he studying? 28. Does he work for his family? 29. Come this way.

LESSON 37.

VOICE OF VERBS.

Voice is a distinction between the forms which a verb assumes to show whether the subject of the sentence stands for the doer, or for the object of the action expressed by the verb.

There are two voices, the active and the passive.

A verb is in the active voice when the subject stands for the doer of the action, e.g. :—

La muger lava la ropa. *The woman washes the clothes.*

Here the word *woman* shows the doer of the action *to wash*.

A verb is in the passive voice when the subject of the sentence stands for the *object* of the action expressed by the verb, e.g. :—

El muchacho fué castigado por su padre. *The boy was beaten by his father.*

Here the subject of the sentence is *boy* and it denotes the object on which the action of beating was exercised. Examples :—

ACTIVE VOICE.

I write the letters.

He sells boots.

He taught me Spanish.

PASSIVE VOICE.

The letters are written by me.

Boots are sold by him.

{ *I was taught Spanish by him.*
Spanish was taught me by him.

The passive voice in Spanish is formed by the verb **ser** with the past participle of the second verb, care being taken that the latter agree with the subject in gender and in number, as :—

Han sido engañados. *They have been deceived.*

Instead of **ser** the verb **estar** is used with past participles when the latter is to describe only, without any reference to an action, e.g. :—

La carta está escrita.

The letter is written.

La carta está acabada.

The letter is finished.

El vidrio está roto.

The glass is broken.

La escuela está bien situada.

The school is well situated.

El chico está bien educado.

The boy is well educated.

As stated in Lesson 12 the vague and indefinite pronouns *one*, *they*, are translated by *se*. See also Lesson 40.

Se dice. *They say. It is said.*

VOCABULARY.

un almohadón, <i>a large cushion</i>	quejoso, <i>plaintful</i>
el brocado, <i>the brocade</i>	nacido, <i>born</i>
el celo, <i>the zeal</i>	dormido, <i>asleep</i>
el amor, <i>the love</i>	instruido, <i>learned</i>
el motivo, <i>the motive, the reason</i>	grave, <i>grave</i>
el daño, <i>the harm</i>	maltratado, <i>ill-treated</i>
el dictamen, <i>the judgment</i>	si lo hay, <i>if there is any</i>
la controversia, <i>the controversy</i>	ocupado, <i>busy, engaged</i>
la miseria, <i>the misery</i>	confesar *, <i>to confess</i>
la felicidad, <i>the happiness</i>	educar, <i>to educate</i>
la bata, <i>the robe</i>	trasladarse, <i>to be transferred</i>
la raya } <i>the stripe</i>	prescindir, <i>to lay aside, to do without</i>
la lista	alabar, <i>to praise</i>
el autor, <i>the author</i>	emplear, <i>to employ</i>
vedado, <i>forbidden</i>	asustar, <i>to frighten</i>
despejado, <i>smart, quick</i>	convidar, <i>to invite</i>
sumamente, <i>very much</i>	recompensar, <i>to reward</i>

EXERCISE 37.

1. Es eso que me está vedado. 2. ¡Qué despejado es! 3. Estaba sentada en un almohadón de brocado. 4. Estoy sumamente agradecido al celo y amor que me muestra. 5. Confieso que tiene algún motivo para estar quejoso de nosotros. 6. Comprendí que era bien nacido y que no estaba mal educado. 7. El daño está hecho y no tiene remedio. 8. Estoy acostumbrado á leer en la fisonomía de los hombres. 9. Dormido estás, me dijo, despierta. 10. Segundo mi dictamen está muy instruido en la controversia. 11. ¿Porqué ha de ser necesaria nuestra miseria para la felicidad universal? 12. Fué conducido á nuestra ciudad, trasladándose en grave estado al hospital. 13. Ha sido una cosa de la cual todo el mundo ha podido prescindir. 14. Somos amados de todos nuestros amigos. 15. Los discípulos habrían sido alabados. 16. Este perro es muy maltratado por su dueño. 17. ¿Cómo fué concluida la operación? 18. ¿Han sido castigados sus niños de V.? 19. ¿Está V. ocupado? 20. ¿Cuándo fué escrita la carta?

1. Time can be employed in many good and noble actions. 2. The evil (*el mal*), if there is any, is done. 3. She was dressed in (*con*) a white robe

with black stripes. 4. All the people in (*de*) the house were frightened. 5. If I pay well it is because I like not to be badly served. 6. How is it possible that such proceedings (*procedimientos*) be forbidden us? 7. You are mistaken in that matter. 8. They say that the goods have arrived. 9. The operation was concluded with great happiness. 10. The merchants' friends had all been invited. 11. This book has been written by one of the best Spanish authors. 12. By whom will our lessons be corrected? 13. Have your children been rewarded? (*recompensar*). 14. Have the pupils been punished? 15. Have you ever been deceived by him? 16. Do you think that Alice (*Alicia*) is loved by her sister? 17. Were the children loved by their parents? 18. This table was made by James. 19. Is he always busy? 20. The cashier was engaged.

LESSON 38.

PASSIVE VOICE (*Continued*).

The student is apt to make the mistake of thinking that any past participle with an auxiliary verb *to be* must be the passive voice, but this is not so. Compare :—

El dia ha venido.	<i>Day is come.</i>
Han caido las hojas.	<i>The leaves are fallen.</i>
Ha ido.	<i>He is gone.</i>

RULE.—To form the passive voice use *ser* when referring to persons, *se* when referring to things, but this rule is not hard and fast.

Los niños son amados.	<i>Children are loved.</i>
El chico es castigado á menudo.	<i>The boy is often punished.</i>
V. ha sido engañado.	<i>You have been deceived.</i>
Han sido premiados.	<i>They have been rewarded.</i>
Ella había sido empleada por ellos.	<i>She had been employed by them.</i>
Las cartas han sido escritas por el dependiente.	<i>The letters have been written by the clerk.</i>
Será puesto á disposición del gobierno.	<i>He will be put at the disposal of the Government.</i>
El embusteros es aborrecido.	<i>The hypocrite is hated.</i>
Lo que es creible.	<i>What is believable.</i>
Con el buque se han perdido 150 toneladas de cargo.	<i>With the ship 150 tons of cargo have been lost.</i>
Se está dando la última mano al arreglo de las casas particulares.	<i>They are finishing the arrangement of the private houses.</i>
No puede olvidarse.	<i>It cannot be forgotten.</i>

Se les obligó á salir al balcón.

They obliged them to go on the balcony.

Se les acusa de hallarse complicados en los sucesos de ayer.

They are accused of being complicated in the events of yesterday.

Note that in using **se** for the passive voice the English past participle is put in Spanish into the tense and person of the verb *to be*, which is replaced by **se**, thus : "It is said that cold is the parent of frugality". Change *said* into the tense of the *it is*, viz. present indicative. Replace the latter by **se** :—

Se dice que el frío es el padre de la frugalidad.

VOCABULARY.

la tertulia, *the party, the at-home*
 el placer, *the pleasure*
 la cortedad, *the shortness*
 el consuelo, *the consolation*
 el punto, *the point*
 la selección, *the selection*
 sujeto, *subject*
 lleno, *full*
 débil, *weak*

de acuerdo, *agreed*
 de balde, *for nothing*
 mantenerse *, *to hold*
 asesinar, *to assassinate*
 firmar, *to sign*
 encuadrinar, *to bind*
 perfeccionar, *to improve*
 facturar, *to register, to invoice*

EXERCISE 38.

1. Estas mercancías se venderán fácilmente. 2. Se cree que se dará un premio. 3. Se le quiere mucho. 4. ¿Cuándo será acabada la traducción ? 5. Fui invitado á la tertulia. 6. Se mantienen firmes los precios. 7. El rey de Italia ha sido asesinado. 8. El general fué matado por uno de sus oficiales. 9. ¿Ha sido firmada la carta ? 10. Aseguran que los géneros se venden bien. 11. El libro fué escrito por un francés. 12. Por quién fué hecha la gramática. 13. Esta traducción ha sido corregida por un profesor de lenguas. 14. Esta escuela se edificó en seis meses. 15. No se podía obtener un precio más elevado. 16. No se puede conseguir nada. 17. Los libros fueron encuadrinados por él. 18. Si la vida está llena de placeres su cortedad es un mal. 19. La filosofía es un consuelo muy débil. 20. El hombre está en la tierra perfeccionando su alma. 21. Hermoso es lo que hermoso hace. 22. Este es el único punto en que estamos de acuerdo. 23. No se ha dicho nada.

1. The warehouse was burned yesterday. 2. The books are bound in red leather. 3. By whom were the letters burned ? 4. For how much are they selling the house ? 5. Much beer is drunk in Germany. 6. The selec-

tion has been made. 7. Cigars are being sold at high prices. 8. The work has been done in a short time. 9. So that the cigars may not be spoiled. 10. Was the umbrella missed? 11. I hope nothing has been forgotten. 12. This article is made in France. 13. A new system has been adopted. 14. The invoice has been lost. 15. This article is sold much cheaper by our neighbours. 16. The trunks have been registered. 17. Everything has been done to help him. 18. They are being sold almost for nothing. 19. Why has man to be subject to pain? 20. He tells us that life is full of pleasures. 21. If life is long our pains become more lasting (*duraderos*). 22. He was very far from being insensible to his merit. 23. Why do they do that? 24. Have you been invited to their "At home"? 25. Let this translation be made at once.

LESSON 39.

PASSIVE VOICE (*Continued*).

Use *estar* when the past participle is used only as a descriptive adjective, without reference to the action expressed, as :—

La felicidad existe pero está muy mal repartida.	<i>Happiness exists, but is very badly divided.</i>
Está familiarizado con el habla y los usos de los franceses.	<i>He is used to the speech and usages of the French.</i>
Está V. equivocado.	<i>You are mistaken.</i>
Las cartas están acabadas.	<i>The letters are finished.</i>
La ventana está rota.	<i>The window is broken.</i>
La carta está mal escrita.	<i>The letter is badly written.</i>
El paquete está hecho.	<i>The parcel is made.</i>
Está claramente demostrado.	<i>It is clearly demonstrated.</i>
La escuela está bien situada.	<i>The school is well situated.</i>

Use *ser* or its equivalent *se* if the past participle refers to the action, as :—

No puede hacerse.	<i>It cannot be done.</i>
Este envío se compone de clases buenas.	<i>This shipment is composed of good qualities.</i>
No se puede hacer eso.	<i>That cannot be done.</i>
Se dice que ha habido un incendio.	<i>They say there has been a fire.</i>
¿ Vale la pena de leerse ?	<i>Is it worth { reading ? being read ?</i>
¿ Se habla español en Méjico ?	<i>Is Spanish spoken in Mexico ?</i>
Es amado de su madre.	<i>He is loved by his mother.</i>
Ha sido engañado.	<i>He has been deceived.</i>

This and the following lessons will not only be for practice on the passive voice but will contain general examples of *ser* and *estar*.

The student may at first experience some difficulty in knowing which verb to use with past participles, but a careful study of the examples given will enable him soon to translate quite correctly and without hesitation. He must not leave the subject until he understands it thoroughly.

VOCABULARY.

la costurera, <i>the dressmaker, seamstress</i>	libre, <i>free</i>
la esclavitud, <i>the slavery</i>	lejos, <i>far</i>
el triunfo, <i>triumph</i>	travieso, <i>naughty</i>
la sombra, <i>the shadow</i>	descalzo, <i>barefoot</i>
el remordimiento, <i>the remorse</i>	menudito, <i>particular</i>
la lucha, <i>the struggle</i>	recto, <i>right</i>
la voluntad, <i>the will</i>	soso, <i>insipid</i>
la boda, <i>the wedding</i>	sereno, <i>serene</i>
la monja, <i>the nun</i>	cojo, <i>lame</i>
la manía, <i>the eccentricity</i>	andar *, <i>to walk</i>
inmenso, <i>immense</i>	suponer *, <i>to suppose</i>
agitado, <i>agitated</i>	una ganga, <i>a bargain</i>
vacío, <i>empty</i>	la literatura, <i>the literature</i>

EXERCISE 39.

1. Para ella era una desgracia inmensa. 2. La esclavitud es un gran mal social. 3. Estaba seguro de su triunfo. 4. Recuerdo (*I recollect*) que estábamos en un montecillo que caía al mar. 5. Cuando estoy solo, me persigue (*pursues*) como una sombra el remordimiento. 6. La lucha es la vida. 7. La joven estaba muy agitada. 8. Eso no es realidad, eso no es verdad. 9. Le parece (*it seems to him*) que el mundo está vacío. 10. En el camino del mal todo es empezar. 11. Yo creo que el hombre es libre. 12. Nada estaba más lejos del pensamiento de aquella mujer. 13. En el corazón la voluntad no manda. 14. Estaba acostumbrada á andar descalza. 15. ¡Qué menudito es V.! 16. Alegre fué la boda. 17. Ello ha de ser, conque no lo lloremos antes de que llegue. 18. Es posible que tenga la fuerza de voluntad que es necesaria para ello. 19. Lo recto es decirle que es imposible. 20. La caja está rota. 21. Supongamos que no lo fuese. 22. Esta chica es más sosa que el agua. 23. No sería monja por un imperio. 24. No eran estas las únicas flaquezas y manías del viejo.

1. The night was cold and serene. 2. Is your sister a milliner? 3. How are you to-day? 4. He is just a trifle (*un si es no es*) naughty.

5. How is the weather? 6. You are to do it. 7. Since (*ya*) he will not write let it be so. 8. It is certainly (*de cierto*) a bargain. 9. I am very fond of literature. 10. That poor thing is lame. 11. Are you sure of it? 12. It is all the same (*igual*) to me. 13. You are hard to please. 14. They are at a premium. 15. This is much in request (*solicitado*). 16. It is in the first street to the right. 17. These are the ups and downs (*peripecias*) of life. 18. She was wearing a very pretty silk dress. 19. This is not worth anything. 20. He was very unfortunate. 21. She was very angry. 22. He said that it could not be done. 23. The building was burned. 24. Are you busy? 25. Is the book well written? 26. Is it a long story? 27. Nothing was further from my thoughts. 28. What an agreeable man he is! 29. The child was barefoot. 30. It is a pity you cannot go. 31. It cannot be helped. 32. Every man is obliged to do what he can to improve his social condition.

LESSON 40.

USES OF *Se* AND *Si*.

It will be seen from the previous lesson that *se*, unless reflective (Lesson 12, 22), always means the verb *ser*, and can be translated into English by the verb *to be*. It is an indefinite personal pronoun, referring to actions in such a way as to leave doubtful both the sex and the number of persons it represents. In this respect it is like the English *one*, *they*, *people*, where the doers are represented vaguely and indefinitely.

Its place in construction is the same as other personal pronouns, viz. before any tense, or added to infinitives, present participles, and imperatives (the latter being affirmative), e.g. —

Se cree que partió para el Continente.	<i>They believe he left for the Continent.</i>
Se alquila una casa espaciosa.	<i>To be let a spacious house.</i>
Se hizo el sillón á su medida <i>(ironical).</i>	<i>They made the arm-chair to his measure.</i>
Las ideas que se inculcan.	<i>The ideas that are inculcated.</i>
Se han operado tres detenciones.	<i>Three detentions have been made.</i>
Mañana se celebrará el gran concierto.	<i>The great concert will take place to-morrow.</i>
Al cabo todo se llega á saber.	<i>At last all becomes known.</i>
Suspendiéndose el debate salió del cuarto.	<i>The debate being suspended he left the room.</i>
Se hacen preguntas muy chuscas.	<i>Droll questions are made.</i>
La verdad puede decirse á todo el mundo.	<i>The truth can be told to everybody.</i>

Se puede decir que forman parte de nuestra familia.	<i>It may be said that they form part of our family.</i>
Cada cosa se hará á su tiempo.	<i>Each thing will be duly done.</i>
Véase lección 20.	<i>See lesson 20.</i>
Es como una mina inagotable y mientras más se ahonda más oro se encuentra.	<i>It is like a gold mine where the deeper they go the more gold they find.</i>

Se therefore is used in three distinct ways, viz. :—

- (1) For indefinite subject and passive voice, as above.
- (2) For reflective, as Lessons 12 and 22.
- (3) To replace the dative **le** and **les**, *to him, them, etc.* (Lessons 9 and 10), whenever these pronouns are joined with the accusative object.

VOCABULARY.

el volante, *the fly-wheel*
 la máquina, *the machine*
 los comentarios, *the commentaries*
 el empleado, *the employee*
 en el acto, *on the instant*
 un largo rato, *a long time*
 el preso, *the prisoner*
 el crimen, *the crime*
 el caso, *the case, instance*
 la clase, *the quality*
 la resignación, *the resignation*
 el efecto } *the effect*
 la consecuencia }

el puesto, *the post*
 el escrupulo, *the scruple*
 extraño, *strange*
 salvo, *except*
 arrollar, *to roll up, twist round*
 trasladar, *to transfer*
 se prohíbe el paso, *private! no way!*
 ignorar, *not to know, to be unaware*
 levantar, *to raise*
 componerse *, *to be composed*
 oir *, *to hear*
 soportar, *to support, suffer*

In this and future lessons words in the Spanish exercises which are similar to English will not appear in the vocabularies.

EXERCISE 40.

1. Tuvo la desgracia de ser arrollado por el volante de la máquina. 2. Los comentarios han sido interminables. 3. El empleado fué atacado de un accidente nervioso. 4. Se le condujo en una coche cesta á la casa de socorro. 5. Después de curado se le trasladó á su domicilio. 6. La anciana después de curada fué trasladada á su domicilio. 7. Se había amortiguado tanto la marcha del tranvía que el choque careció de importancia. 8. Demuestra mucho talento, no se puede negar. 9. Cuanto pida se le facilitará en el acto. 10. Es el más extraño negocio que se puede imaginar. 11. No se usa el

dinero sino se abusa. 12. Pasó largo rato antes que se echase de menos al preso. 13. Se les prohíbe leer salvo los libros que los superiores les permiten. 14. Se prohíbe el paso. 15. Ignórarse si se trata de un crimen ó de un suicidio. 16. Témese que aunque se haga esto no se consiga evitar algunos conflictos. 17. Se deja oír mucho antes que se le vea. 18. Estaba dispuesto á concedérsele todo.

1. Education is worthy of being sought. 2. A step (*paso*) has already been taken. 3. We cannot judge the effects of what has been done. 4. A general cry (*grito*) of indignation was raised. 5. He went (*acudir*) to the post that had been assigned to him. 6. I do not know that any other thing can be done than that I have arranged (*dispuesto*). 7. Time is not given us to repair the machine. 8. It is an observation which must not be forgotten (*echarse en olvido*). 9. The royal stables (*caballerizas*) are worth (*merecen*) seeing. 10. Cases are given of people dying of hunger. 11. This shipment (*envío*) is composed of good qualities. 12. I do not doubt they will be worth hearing. 13. Things must (*haber de*) not be examined with so much scruple. 14. This is called going straight to the point of the difficulty. 15. He asked me what they were saying of him. 16. The misfortunes of life must be suffered with resignation. 17. It cannot be denied that you have a good (*feliz*) memory.

LESSON 41.

USES OF SE AND SI (*Continued*).

The pronouns **se** and **si**, which as already seen are singular or plural, masculine or feminine, are used, the first as the direct or indirect object of the verb conjunctive, and the second similar to the pronouns mentioned in Lesson 9, disjunctive, or as the object of a preposition.

Se reflexive means *oneself, himself, herself, yourself, themselves*, e.g. :—

Divertirse.

To amuse oneself.

Él, ella, se divirtió.

He, she amused him (her) self.

V. se divirtió—Vds. se divirtieron.

You amused yourself—selves.

Ellos, ellas se divirtieron.

They amused themselves.

Si is used to emphasize the **se**, but may often be used disjunctively, as :—

V. se equivoca á sí.

You yourself are mistaken.

No ama á nadie sino á sí mismo.

She loves nobody but herself.

Su divisa es cada uno para sí.

His motto is each for himself.

Siempre hablaba de sí mismo.

He was always talking of himself.

Cada uno tiene dentro de sí la capacidad del albedrió y la libertad de acción.

Each has in himself the capacity of freewill and liberty of action.

No piensa más que en si.

He only thinks of himself.

Ha vuelta en si.

He has come to himself.

Déjela á si misma.

Leave her to herself.

Estaba metido en si.

He was deep in thought.

Cantaba sin conocer que tenía en si una fuente misteriosa de inspiración y de vida.

She was singing without knowing that she had in herself a mysterious fountain of inspiration and life.

Maldito sea el que sólo nace para si.

Cursed be he who lives for himself.

El que limita su vida á si mismo ese no vive.

He who limits his life to himself does not live.

Desde este punto ya no tuvo paz, ya no se acordó de si misma.

From this point she had no peace, nor remembered herself.

To further strengthen phrases the words **mismo** and **propio** are used, which change their termination to show gender and number.
Examples :—

Ella se ama á si propia.

She loves herself.

Aquella mujer era en si hermosa.

That woman was beautiful in herself.

No gusta uno lisonjearse á si mismo.

One does not like to praise himself.

This **mismo** is also used to strengthen any noun or pronoun :—

Yo mismo lo haré.

I myself will do it.

El mismo me lo ha dicho.

He himself has told it to me.

Ellos mismos lo dicen.

They themselves say it.

El mismo había hecho el acto.

He himself had done the act.

VOCABULARY.

el embrutecimiento, *brutishness*
 el medio, *the middle, midst*
 el sueño, *the sleep*
 el riesgo, *the risk*
 la incomodidad, *the inconvenience*
 la toalla, *the towel*
 recíproco, *reciprocal*
 la prueba, *the proof*
 la ternura, *the tenderness*
 el afecto, *the affection*
 el banco, *the bench*

la familia, *the family*
 envilecer *, { to brutify
 degradar, to degrade
 apostar *, to bet
 coser, to sew
 sorprender, to surprise
 meter, to put
 apretar *, to compress, hasten
 salir * por fiador { to stand security
 to be bail

guardar, *to keep, lay by*
 no poder * más, *to be exhausted*
 enterarse, *to acquaint oneself*
 descubrir, *to discover*

dañarse, *to hurt oneself*
 marcharse, } *to go away*
 irse *,

EXERCISE 41.

1. La esclavitud envilece y degrada, y sólo puede dar de sí en último fin el embrutecimiento. 2. Despues de 15 días que llevo de hambre, apuesto á que se me ha olvidado la manera de comer. 3. Entra y dí lo que se te ofrezca. 4. No sé leer, ni escribir, ni coser, ni trabajar, ni nada que se le parezca. 5. Este cruel designio fué sorprendido por ella en algunas palabras que se le escaparon en medio del sueño. 6. Se les metió en la cabeza la idea de que podrían hacer algo mejor. 7. El único medio que se les ocurrió de evitar el riesgo fué apretar cuanto más podian el paso. 8. Pronto se nos pasó la incomodidad producida por estos accidentes. 9. No se atrevió á salir por fiador de un amigo suyo. 10. Guardó la ropa que no se iba á poner, y dejando fuera un traje completo se vistió. 11. ¿Te se alivió la cabeza? 12. No puedo más, exclamó, dejándose caer sobre un sofá. 13. Le advierto que la fama se queda corta. 14. No se ha enterado V. de eso. 15. Viene bien aquello de que la ropa sucia debe lavarse en casa. 16. La familia ha sido engañada.

1. Who would have imagined it? 2. Some words have escaped thee which have discovered to me what thou art. 3. I imagine we shall have a very gay attendance (*concurrencia lucida*). 4. He took a towel and cleaned himself without saying a word. 5. Nobody dares to reply. 6. On the following day I said good-bye to all (*cuantos*) friends and acquaintances I had in that capital. 7. My life is delicious: I get up and eat; I eat and go to bed. 8. Have you hurt yourself much? 9. They had not moved from the sofa nor done anything but look at each other with tenderness, hold (*estrecharse*) each others' hands and give reciprocal proofs of affection. 10. He does not want to go away, neither do we want him to go away. 11. I want to go to my rooms to cleanse myself (*asearse*) a little. 12. The author has referred again to the use and abuse of money. 13. God helps those who help themselves. 14. They sat on a bench that was against (*apoyado contra*) the wall (*muro*). 15. I hope that you will amuse yourselves. 16. Put on your overcoat, hat, and gloves.

LESSON 42.

USES OF SE AND SI (*Continued*).

It must not be overlooked that the indefinite pronoun *se* as passive and reflective precedes the dative when joined to the same. All persons and things personified are dative. Examples:—

Él se me excusó.

He excused himself to me.

Se le cree.

They believe him.

Se le figura que es mentira.

It seems to him to be false.

Se me dice.

They say to me.

The negation, which with other nominatives follows the same, must come before **se**; compare :—

Él no lo ha hecho.

He has not done it.

Yo no se le ha enviado.

I have not sent it to him.

No se me ha dicho que debo ir.

I have not been told that I must go.

No se creía que viniera.

It was not thought that he would come.

The following use of **se**, which is very common, should be carefully noticed :—

En aquel momento **se** me disiparon de la mente las frasescillas que había preparado días antes para echárselas á la cara si ocasión propicia **se** me presentaba para ello.

Ya verás cuan pronto **se** me pasa.

At that moment the phrases that I had prepared days before, to throw at him if the chance offered, slipped from my memory.

Se le puso al caballo en la cabeza no querer dar un paso más adelante.

Thou wilt see how soon it passes from me.

Se nos ha hecho muy tarde.

The horse took it into its head not to go a step farther.

It has got very late.

The student is reminded that the conjunction **y** is changed to **é** before words that commence with **i** or **hi**, viz. :—

Padre é hijo.

Father and son.

Tendría hambre é hizo bien en comerlo.

He must have been hungry, and did well in eating it.

Sólo aspiro á probarle mi gratitud é interés.

I only aspire to prove to you my gratitude and interest for you.

VOCABULARY.

el disparate, *the absurdity, nonsense*

la faz, *the face*

la sangre, *the blood*

la lágrima, *the tear*

la carreta, *the mask*

por naturaleza, *naturally*

el magín, *the imagination, the head (coll.)*

sin embargo, *nevertheless, notwithstanding*

el pelo, *the hair*

agudo, *sharp*

de punta, <i>on end</i>	asomar, <i>to approach</i>
de cuando en cuando, <i>now and then</i> , <i>occasionally</i>	avergonzar *, <i>to shame</i>
arriesgarse, <i>to dare, to risk</i>	interrumpir, <i>to interrupt</i>
ruborizarse, <i>to blush</i>	extender *, <i>to extend</i>

EXERCISE 42.

1. Se censuró á sí mismo. 2. ¡Qué disparates se te ocurren! 3. ¡Ah! se me olvidaba lo principal. 4. Voy á lo que se me quedó ayer. 5. Se me heló toda la sangre. 6. Le pregunté qué se le ofrecía. 7. Pasan por hombres agudos solo porque se arriesgan á decir cuanto se les viene á la boca. 8. Tardé muy poco en acostumbrarme á ello. 9. Al hijo de aquel Sr. no se le olvidó darnos tambien mil gracias. 10. Es muy fácil se me haya escapado algo de esto. 11. Por fin se le cayó á V. la carreta. 12. La conclusión que había pensado se me escapó del magín. 13. No me quejé de esto sin embargo que se me hacía muy cuesta arriba (*hard work*). 14. No se le ocurre á V. que ésta necesariamente ha de terminar como aquella. 15. Al joven se le ponían los pelos de punta. 16. No podía por menos de detenerse de cuando en cuando con el primer pretexto que se le ocurría. 17. Al principio se ruborizó, asomó el carmín á su faz é inclinó la frente avergonzado. 18. Es una persona que se respeta á sí misma. 19. Yo mismo me rio de mí mismo. 20. Ella se reía de nosotros.

1. I had forgotten his name. 2. He is naturally good, and when his anger (*enfado*) has passed all will be arranged. 3. Sir, I replied, because I completely forgot it. 4. It is possible that it would have occurred to me afterwards. 5. At last he took it into his head (*ocurrírsele*) to do something. 6. It never occurred to me. 7. They do not hesitate (*vacilar*) in putting it into practice when a favourable opportunity offers (*proporcionar*). 8. They were not long in getting used to it (*acostumbrarse*). 9. I am sorry it has escaped my memory. 10. His hair stood on end. 11. It occurred to me that he might think of coming. 12. I drew my handkerchief and pretended (*hacer como*) to be wiping my tears. 13. Leave me alone with my nephew and prevent (*impedir*) anyone interrupting us. 14. In that case I go with you (*acompañar*), and I invite the friends to do the same. 15. She extended her hand and indicated the door of the room. 16. They (*impersonal*) have not told me that I must go. 17. It is not worth while to write him. 18. It is said that the Royal family is coming to this city.

LESSON 43.

REFLECTIVE VERBS.

Almost all active verbs may in Spanish be made reflective or pronominal (Lessons 12, 22). When therefore any person performs an

action on himself, or if the idea of reflectiveness be only vaguely conveyed, the Spanish verb is made reflective, and takes accordingly the conjunctive personal pronouns, which are like the dative, except the 3rd persons, **se**, singular and plural, e.g. :—

Me tomo la libertad.

I take the liberty.

Cogió las viandas y se las comió.

He picked up the viands and ate them.

Todo se acaba en este mundo hasta la curiosidad.

All comes to an end in this world even curiosity.

Los novios se las prometen siempre felices.

Sweethearts always promise themselves happy things.

Puede V. figurarse el aspecto de una vivienda donde nada de lo que se estropea se compone, donde la reparación de los objetos no se ha conocido nunca.

You can imagine the look of a dwelling where nothing that gets broken is repaired, where the repairing of objects has never been known.

Clavo que se cae, ó pata que se rompe, ó esquinazo que se desmache, ó astilla que se levanta, ó metal que se desluce, ó porcelana que se desportilla así se quedan por siempre jamás.

A nail that falls, or leg that gets broken, or corner that gets lopped off, or splinter that gets raised, or metal that gets dull, or pot that gets broken, so they remain for ever and ever.

The reflective form is also used in speaking of body, dress, etc., as :—

Voy á cortarme el pelo. *I am going to get my hair cut.*

Voy á hacerme un traje. *I am going to get a suit made.*

It will be noticed that the English possessives *my*, *thy*, etc., are rendered by the article, the pronoun showing to whom the action refers, as :—

Me quité el gabán. *I took off my overcoat.*

El se quitó la gorra. *He took his cap off.*

The reflective verb may become reciprocal ; indeed no distinction of form is usually made between reflexive and reciprocal verbs, but the context will prevent any doubt as to the meaning. Examples :—

Nos amamos.

We love each other.

Vds. se engañan el uno al otro. *You deceive each other.*

Se temerán.

They will fear each other.

Se aborrecen unos á otros.

They hate each other.

Note that the 1st and 2nd persons plural lose respectively the letters **s** and **d** (except **idos**), as :—

Amémonos.	<i>Let us love each other.</i>
Lavaos.	<i>Wash yourselves (fam.).</i>
Pongámonos á cubierta que llueve á cántaros.	<i>Let us take shelter for it is raining copiously.</i>

VOCABULARY.

el asco, <i>the nausea, disgust</i>	alrededor, <i>around</i>
la jofaina, <i>the washbowl</i>	ser apto, <i>to be fit</i>
el peinado, <i>the hair</i>	discurrir, <i>to plan, scheme</i>
de puntapiés, <i>on tiptoe</i>	esuchar, <i>to listen</i>

EXERCISE 43.

1. Tales ascos sentía por el contacto que tuvieron sus manos que se las lavó en la jofaina de la alcoba. 2. Se quitó el sombrero, al subir la escalera, para arreglar con los dedos su peinado. 3. Cuando un hombre se ha mejorado á sí mismo, es más apto para mejorar á aquellos que están en contacto con él. 4. El primer deber de todo hombre es mejorarse, educarse, y elevarse. 5. La razón está en que se ocupan de sus negocios. 6. Sin salir del aposento, se retiraron á uno de sus extremos. 7. Abrióse la puerta y se presentó á la vista del caballero un hombre fuerte y robusto. 8. Nos sentamos, ó más bien nos reclinamos al rededor de él. 9. Me topaba (*metí*) á veces con algunos que no apetecían otra cosa. 10. Sintiéndose despreciado al llegar allí, salir despreciando era pagar con la misma moneda. 11. Sólo pensaba en darse buena vida, quiero decir en comer y en tratarse bien. 12. Yo me quedé discurriendo en que gastar el dinero, pero tardé poco en resolverme. 13. Quiero cortarme el pelo. 14. Quítese V. de en medio.

1. Dogs ought not to attack (*acometerse*) each other. 2. The desire for vengeance has not left me (*extinguirse*). 3. If this young man dies on (*en*) his hands, do you know what (*cuales*) will be the consequences? 4. On the following morning he presented himself to us again (*otra vez*). 5. She approached on tiptoe and looked through the key-hole (*ojo de la llave en la cerradura*). 6. He took off the said hat and, approaching the partition (*tabique*), listened. 7. He does not want to go away (*marcharse*), and they do not wish him to go either. 8. He took me to his house when a boy and undertook (*encargarse de*) my education. 9. Never should a man be so disheartened (*abatirse*) as to come to forget that he is a man. 10. I am glad to see you so pleased with your lot (*suerte*). 11. She allows herself to

be seen by nobody until midday. 12. They seated themselves at the table and we set ourselves (*disponerse*) to serve them. 13. I dressed myself as best (*lo mejor*) I could.

LESSON 44.

THE INDEFINITE PRONOUN.

In addition to the use of the article **lo** with abstract nouns (Lesson 6) there is another use of the same before adjectives, which is worthy of careful notice. It will doubtless be better understood by sentences. Compare therefore the following:—

Sabemos lo mucho que nos quería *We know how much she loved us.*
ella.

Mira lo guapo que es. *Look how smart he is.*

El autor debe abandonar lo pueril para representar lo grande. *The author ought to leave the puerile to represent what is grand.*

En lo de agricultura son de los mejores. In that which concerns agriculture they are of the best.

No era lo justo, pero era lo legal. *It was not what was just but it was what was legal.*

NOTE.—*How* is almost always translated **to** when following a verb and preceding an adjective or past participle.

Lo is used in referring to verbs, phrases or sentences to which no gender can be ascribed, as :—

Se lo pidió. Húbolo de conceder y así lo hizo.

Lo often refers to the whole of a preceding statement, as :—

Es mi amigo y yo lo soy suyo.

He is my friend and I am his.

In cases like this where the persons referred to are of different sexes the **lo** remains invariable, but the pronoun shows the gender of the person represented, e.g. :—

Si quereis ser mi esposo y lo seré vuestra.
Cervantes' "La Gitanilla".

If it does not represent a noun but a whole phrase or idea, it may be rendered by **ello** (subject) or **lo** (object), as :—

Me ha dicho que va a venir pero no lo creo.

He has told me that he is coming but I do not believe it.

If it refers to a noun the article **lo** shows the gender of same :—

¿Es V. la hija de ese señor ? *Are you the daughter of that gentleman?*
Sí, la soy. *Yes, I am (that).*

As may have been observed in the earlier lessons, the impersonal *it*, subject of a verb, is not translated usually in Spanish, thus :—

¿Que es eso ?	<i>What is that ?</i>
Es un libro.	<i>It is a book.</i>
No me importa.	<i>It does not matter to me.</i>

VOCABULARY.

la cuerda, <i>the cord</i>
el encargo, <i>the charge, duty</i>
falso, <i>false</i>
el indiferentismo, <i>indifferentism</i>
el respeto, <i>the respect</i>
lo verdadero, <i>that which is true</i>
alentado, <i>encouraged</i>
precisamente, <i>exactly</i>
lo restante, <i>that which remains</i>
delgado, <i>thin, delicate</i>

lo ageno, <i>that belonging to others</i>
lo llano, <i>plain, homely</i>
lo sucedido, <i>what had happened</i>
encargar, <i>to charge, to commission</i>
proponer *, <i>to propose</i>
acumular, <i>to accumulate</i>
lograr, <i>to get</i>
bañar, <i>to bathe</i>
conducir *, <i>to conduct</i>
acordarse * de, <i>to remember</i>

EXERCISE 44.

1. La cuerda se rompe siempre por lo más delgado.
2. Lo que se ha hecho es lo siguiente.
3. Agradómos lo delicioso del sitio y resolvimos pasar en el lo restante del día.
4. Me exhortó á que no tomara lo ageno contra la voluntad de su dueño.
5. Le quieren mucho por lo llano y bueno que es con ellos.
6. Para malo basta y sobra con lo visto.
7. Me hallo bueno, pero aun cuando no lo estuviera, partiría, en vista de lo urgente que es mi viaje.
8. No faltó á nadie prefiriendo el uno al otro.
9. Al que sólo se enseñaron lo malo, difícilmente podrá distinguir lo bueno.
10. Queda arreglado el encargo que me encargaste, todo lo mejor que era posible.
11. Deberían proponerse acumular lo necesario, lo bastante, para sostenerse cómodamente.
12. ¡Ah ! amigo, principio á temer lo peor.
13. No es precisamente entre el ruido donde más se divierte uno.
14. Todos haremos lo que podemos para que se logre.
15. Se halló alentado por lo sucedido.
16. ¿Cómo se te ha ocurrido la idea de bañarte por la noche ?

1. He took (*conducir*) us to the house of a friend, where we passed the rest of the day.
2. He is very young to (*para*) distinguish the true from the false.
3. You judge (*juzgar de*) the present by the past.
4. Nobody

who deals (*tratar*) with him can know how good he is. 5. In Europe there is everything, but the good abounds (*abunda*) more than the bad. 6. Why this jump (*salto*) from the best to the worst, from the great to the small, from what is surprising, from the marvellous, to their true antithesis ? 7. In religion indifferentism conducts to all that is bad and to nothing good. 8. He does not remember the past, but only thinks of the present. 9. This, nevertheless, is not what is common (*común*). 10. The idea that I should soon have to get up before so many sportive people (*gente guasona*) and start speaking (*romper á hablar*) gave me goose flesh (*carne de gallina*). 11. The only rule that must not be cast into oblivion (*echarse en olvido*) is that of getting a good education ; that respect that we owe to everybody. 12. As it was raining, the best thing was to return home.

LESSON 45.

IMPERATIVE Mood.

The observant student will have noticed that the imperative mood, so much used, is one of the easiest to form, for, as stated in Lesson 8, the present indicative, with only six exceptions, gives the present subjunctive, and the imperative, excepting the 2nd persons, has terminations exactly like the present subjunctive. As the 1st and 3rd persons of the latter tense are alike, it follows that the imperative with **Vd.** is always like the 1st person of the present subjunctive, the pronoun **Vd.** being added for politeness, e.g. :—

comprar, <i>to buy</i>	<i>que compre, that I buy (may buy)</i>
<i>compro, I buy</i>	<i>compre V., (buy you)</i>

The third person plural, in all tenses without exception, ends in **n**, consequently the plural of the above *buy (you)* simply requires the addition of this letter, viz. :—

comprenden Vds., buy (plural)

Note that the 3rd persons of the imperative mood require the conjunction **que**, viz. :—

<i>que compre él, ella, let him (her) buy</i>
<i>que comprenden ellos, ellas, let them buy</i>

The 2nd person imperative affirmative is, with only a few exceptions, like the 3rd person singular of the present indicative.

The 2nd person plural affirmative, without any exception, is formed from the infinitive by changing the **r** into **d**, e.g. :

<i>comprar, to buy</i>	<i>comprad, buy ye</i>
------------------------	------------------------

These 2nd persons used negatively are as the present subjunctive, e.g. :—

no compres, *do not (thou) buy*
no compreis, *do not (ye) buy*

The reason why the third persons require *que* is that the real imperative is left understood, that is to say, instead of translating literally *deje Vd. que compre él* (*let (you) that he buy*), the verb *let* is often, but not necessarily, left understood.

The 2nd persons *thou* and *ye* are much used in Spanish, but only familiarly, which means that when the English *you* stands for a near relative, an intimate friend, a menial servant, a child or an animal, it is translated **tú**, singular, **vosotros**, plural.

The student therefore may learn to speak the language well without having had occasion to use these pronouns, and this is why we have omitted them from the previous lessons. In a visit to Spain they would be required, and we propose therefore to introduce them in the following lessons.

VOCABULARY.

el defecto, <i>the defect</i>	verificar, <i>to verify, fulfil</i>
el colchón, <i>the mattress</i>	pasar adelante, <i>to go forward</i>
la almohada, <i>the pillow</i>	violar, <i>to violate</i>
antojar, <i>to desire, whim, fancy</i>	llover * á cántaros, <i>to rain copiously</i>
desayunarse, <i>to breakfast</i>	

EXERCISE 45.

1. Retírese V. y haga lo que se le antoje, pues no necesito de V. hasta la noche.
2. Vaya V., no se meta en negocios agenos.
3. Si fuimos malos, corrijasenos.
4. Aquí tiene V. la declaración ; léala y corrija si encuentra algún defecto.
5. Es la hora en que te desayunas con tus padres ; verificalo como los demás días.
6. Lléveme agua á la alcoba, camisa y ropa interior, y hágame un chocolate, que quiero salir inmediatamente.
7. Traigan Vs. colchones, almohadas y ropa de cama.
8. Siéntese V. y no sea tan vivo (*hasty*).
9. ¡Qué Dios te haga feliz y qué sea para muchos años !
10. ¡Qué un hombre se resuelva y se determine á adelantar !
11. Cuando acabe pase V. á mi gabinete.
12. Haga V. el favor de pasar adelante.
13. No deje V. de venir mañana.
14. Cierra la puerta pero no cierres la ventana.
15. Estudia bien tu lección y escribe los ejercicios.
16. ¿Porqué no me has escrito antes ?

1. Ask what you (2nd pers.) like (*parezca*), take what they give.
2. Sit down ; tell me as much (*cuanto*) as you like, and excuse me for making you wait (*esperar*) a few minutes.
3. Let me so call you.
4. Do me the favour to put something before the lock to cover (*tapar*) the key-hole (*ojo de la llave*).
5. Do not leave (2nd) for to-morrow what you can do to-day.
6. Do not consider any matter so trivial as not to merit thy attention.
7. Let us change the scene (*mudar de escena*).
8. Believe (2nd plural) what you please (*dar la gana*).
9. Be persuaded that I never violated the inclination of my daughter.
10. Let us get under cover (*ponerse á cubierto*) as it is raining copiously.
11. Bring (2nd) me the letters at once.
12. Tell him to read it again.
13. Get up (2nd) at once.
14. Come in and take a seat.
15. Come in, gentlemen, and I will show you my Spanish books.
16. What hast thou done ?
17. Run (2nd) and fetch the doctor.
18. Art thou not well ?
19. Have you studied your lesson ?
20. Try to learn a little each day.
21. Do not take any notice of him for he is a blockhead (*majadero*).
22. Thou art not eating ; what is the matter with thee ?

LESSON 46.

ENGLISH DEFECTIVE VERBS.

There are a few English verbs which offer some difficulty to the student. Such are the defectives *will*, *may*, *can*, *could*, *should*, mentioned in Lesson 22.

These words are sometimes principal verbs and sometimes only auxiliaries.

When *will* means to be willing it is a principal verb, and is translated *querer*, as :—

¿ Quiere V. darme el libro ?	<i>Will you give me the book ?</i>
Le dije que fuese pero no quiso ir.	<i>I told him to go but he would not.</i>
¿ Que quiere la señora ?	<i>What does the lady want ?</i>
¿ Quiere V. cerrar la puerta ?	<i>Will you shut the door ?</i>

When *will* simply refers to futurity, or to an action subject to a condition, it is translated by the future or conditional tense of the verb in question, but *si* in this case requires the subjunctive.

Irá la semana que viene.	<i>He will go next week.</i>
Iría si se lo mandara V.	<i>He would go if you ordered him.</i>
Dijo que iría.	<i>He said he would go.</i>

The English *may* stands for the verb *to may*, implying condition or permission, or on the other hand simply refers to a subjunctive action, as :—

¿Puedo marcharme ?	<i>May I go ?</i>
Puede caerse el niño.	<i>The child may fall.</i>
Iré á su casa pero puede que no le vea.	<i>I will go to his house but may not see him.</i>
Puede ser que no venga.	<i>He may not come.</i>
Puede que vayamos el mes que viene.	<i>We may go next month.</i>
Qué lleve V. feliz viaje.	<i>May you have a happy journey.</i>

Can, could, are translated by the verb *poder*, *to be able*, as :—

No pude menos de conceder lo que pedía.

I could not do less than concede to him what he was asking.

To want is translated, in accordance with the meaning implied, by the verbs *querer*, *desear*, *necesitar*, *hacer falta*, as :—

¿Qué quieren ?	<i>What do they want ?</i>
¿Qué desean ?	<i>What do they desire ?</i>
¿Qué necesitan ?	<i>What do they need ?</i>
¿Qué les hace falta ?	<i>What are they short of ?</i>
Le hace falta un traje nuevo.	<i>He wants (needs) a new suit.</i>

Would and *should* may mean a condition, as :—

Dijo que nos mandaría una carta. *He said he would send us a letter.*

Iría si pudiera. *I should go if I could.*

Should may imply obligation, as : “you should (ought to) do it,” in which case it is generally translated, in the tense implied, by the verb *deber*, as :—

Debería ir. *I should (ought, but perhaps do not) go.*

Digale que debiera (deberia) ir. *Tell him that he ought to go.*

VOCABULARY.

una nube, <i>a cloud</i>	por casualidad, <i>casually</i>
los medios, <i>means</i>	indigno, <i>unworthy</i>
el patrón, <i>the patron, protector ; the landlord of lodging-house</i>	importunar, <i>to importune</i>
la severidad, <i>the severity</i>	venga quien venga, <i>come who may</i>
la pildora, <i>the pill</i>	latir, <i>to beat</i>
aun, <i>even</i>	templar, <i>to temper</i>
	tragar, <i>to swallow</i>

EXERCISE 46.

1. ¿A V. le gusta que le importune una nube de pardioseros ? 2. ¿Puede V. hacérmelo hoy ? 3. Puede que no tenga V. razón. 4. Viven

gastando más de lo que sus medios les permiten. 5. Yo creo y me lo confirma la experiencia de los patrones. 6. Le proporcionó en el acto los medios para poner en ejecución sus planes. 7. Se lo he oido á los amos. 8. Tomó la luz que llevaba el criado, le dió las gracias y las buenas noches. 9. Me habló de V. para que me hiciera este favor. 10. Venga quien venga no estoy en casa para nadie. 11. Téngame preparada la copia para que no pierda demasiado tiempo. 12. Debo cortarme el pelo. 13. Hubo que echarle por (*on account of*) los borrones que dejaba caer en los libros. 14. ¡Es que me lloran los ojos con el cigarro! 15. En nuestro juicio les sobra razón para exclamar así. 16. Halló á todos mis compañeros en el mismo estado, ó peor, si cabe. 17. Al llegar aquí latía mi corazón de un modo que no es dable explicar. 18. La cuenta se encontró cabal (*correct*). 19. Llevó dos levitas, un gabán y la ropa interior y exterior indispensable para vestir dos años con decencia. 20. Llegó á España despues de un largo viaje en que pudo haber perecido (*perished*).

1. He may not have written to us.
2. May I know how your mother is?
3. You (2nd person) know you may come when you will.
4. You (2nd person) may be mistaken.
5. If you are short (*le falta*) ask me; if you have too much (*sobrar*) you may keep it.
6. A place for each thing and each thing in its place.
7. The clerk sought his master (*amo*) and gave him the message (*recado*) of the seller.
8. Nothing is short, nor over, to attend to the needs of life.
9. This will clear away (*allanar*) all the difficulties for thee.
10. Behold (*hé aquí*) how they temper their severity when self-interest (*el propio interés*) steps in (*mediar*).
11. I thought of telling it to him with cleverness (*maña*) and make him swallow the pill.
12. I thanked him for his good advice and promised to profit by it.
13. He saw me casually and took to me (*le caí en gracia*).
14. This gentleman begins where others even rarely (*raras veces*) end.
15. These traits (*rasgos*) of weakness are unworthy of you.
16. They returned all the visits they had received.
17. I don't want to owe anything to anybody.
18. John sent me a message by the groom (*lacayo*).

LESSON 47.

PECULIAR TRANSLATIONS.

There are in English some verbs, frequently used, the meaning of which is changed by their being compounded with a preposition, and there are others, like *to get*, which have no corresponding verb. The student will notice from the following examples that in order to get the correct Spanish he must translate ideas, not words, and he must first ascertain whether the preposition constitutes part of the verb so

as to make one single meaning with it, or whether it gives the verb a different signification or not, e.g. :—

to get (various translations, see Lesson 29)

entrar en	} to go in	acostarse	to lie down
entrar por		señalar	to point out
subir	to go up	bajar (baje V.)	to draw down
salir		las celosías)	to bring down
salir de	} to go out	devolver	to give back
salir por		acabar de	to have just
marcharse	to go away	averiguar	to find out
mirar	to look at	omitir	to leave out
buscar	to look for	aguantar	to put up with
callar	to be silent	hacer caso	to take notice
conseguir	to bring about	quitarse	to take off
enfadarse	} to get angry	conocer	{ to be acquainted with
ponerse furioso		enamorarse de	to fall in love with
enviar á buscar	to send for	vencer	to fall due
sentarse	to sit down		

There are of course many verbs similar to the above, but with the help of a good dictionary the student ought not to have much difficulty in finding the proper verb to translate the English idea.

There are many verbs which in Spanish govern different prepositions to the English, but no rule for these can be given. They must be learned by practice. Such are :—

escaso de medios	<i>limited in means</i>	depender de	<i>to depend on</i>
pensar en	<i>to think of</i>	saltar de gozo	<i>to jump with joy</i>
consentir en	<i>to consent to</i>	tiritar de frio	<i>to tremble with cold</i>

Idioms :—

Hacer calor	sol	frio	fresco	viento	buen ó mal tiempo
<i>To be warm</i>	<i>sunny</i>	<i>cold</i>	<i>cool</i>	<i>windy</i>	<i>good or bad weather</i>

Hace seis meses que estoy aqui. *I have been here six months.*

Hace tres meses que no le he visto. *It is three months since I saw him.*

VOCABULARY.

¡ojalá ! *O that, would that*
menudo, *minute, small*
el cabo, *the end*
el fastidio, *the weariness*

la mudanza, *the change*
la insolencia, *the insolence*
el marinero, *the sailor*
la generosidad, *the generosity*

la alabanza, *the praise*
 afuera, *outside*
 de soslayo, *sideways*
 callar, *to be silent*
 señalar, *to point out*
 procurar, *to try*
 cortar, *to cut, shorten*

significar, *to mean*
 carecer *, *to lack, want*
 quitar, *to take away*
 sisar, *to pilfer, crib*
 enamorarse de, *to fall in love*
 vencer *, *to fall due (bills, etc.)*

EXERCISE 47.

1. Quien calla otorga (*consents*). 2. Le señaló con el dedo. 3. ¿ Conoce V. á muchos españoles? 4. Acabe V. con el negocio. 5. Le miraba sin decir nada. 6. Al oír esto se puso furioso. 7. Le dijo que se quitara el gabán. 8. ¡ Cuánto hace que no le he visto á mi querido padre! 9. ¡ Ojalá que me los enviara! 10. Allí nos desayunamos y mientras tanto le hice menuda relación de cuanto me había sucedido. 11. Al cabo de este tiempo perdió la paciencia. 12. La variedad es madre del gusto. 13. Con una mira de soslayo nos impuso silencio. 14. Procuramos pasar el tiempo en diferentes diversiones para cortar el fastidio. 15. Por lo que á mí toca, sólo comprendí en confuso el proyecto que alabó tanto. 16. ¿ Qué significa esa mudanza? 17. Necesita de un hombre instruido y de buena letra, para poner en limpio mis obras. 18. Carecía de medios para restituirnos á Madrid. 19. Jugaban á los naipes, esperando su venida. 20. Para quitarle el motivo de sisar, me tomé la molestia de informarme del precio de los géneros. 21. La factura vence el 10 corriente.

1. He has just bought them. 2. I told her to do it, but she took no notice. 3. Get them to do it; I cannot make out what he is arriving at (*pretender*). 4. Be silent (2nd person); don't say a word. 5. Are you acquainted with her? 6. I cannot put up with so much insolence. 7. She fell in love with a sailor. 8. The bill falls due on the 10th inst. 9. I told her to lie down and be quiet. 10. How long is it since you saw them? 11. Oh, that I could see my dear mother again! 12. This would be abusing your generosity. 13. He could not remember where he had seen me. 14. Remember (2nd plural) this last extremity (*trance*) in which you see me. 15. Her sacrifice is above (*superior á*) all praise. 16. Does that watch go well? 17. Outside the house appears white as snow, and inside very cleanly. 18. I have to make known (*enterar*) to you something else. 19. I shall depart when I have told you; not a moment before nor (*pero tampoco*) after. 20. Will you really engage me? (*ocupar*). 21. She observed him. 22. On the first landing (*tramo*) of the staircase they found Arthur.

LESSON 48.

IDIOMS.

Idioms are peculiar modes of expression which cannot be translated literally. There are very many in all languages, and they are usually contained in good dictionaries. We shall proceed to give a few of the commonest, which must be learned by heart, and will add more in the following lessons. Some few have already been given.

llevar á cabo	<i>to carry through, to perform</i>
tener éxito	<i>to be successful</i>
reparar en pelillos	<i>to stick at trifles</i>
querer decir	<i>to mean</i>
¿ á cuánto estamos hoy ?	<i>what is the day of the month ?</i>
por cuanto	<i>as far as</i>
llevar á cuestas	<i>to carry on one's back</i>
echar de menos	<i>to miss</i>
sacar en limpio	<i>to make a fair copy</i>
dejar dicho	<i>to leave word</i>

Hay sol, luna, neblina, niebla, polvo, lodo.
It is sunny, moonlight, misty, foggy, dusty, muddy.

Repetition is needed sometimes, and we therefore remind the student again that the verbs *to be* and *to have* are idiomatically used as stated in Lesson 19. We think it well to give further examples in the exercise on this lesson, along with some of the following idiomatic expressions :—

tener que }
 haber de } *to have to*
 volver á, *to do again*

Idioms :—

¿ No es verdad ?	<i>Is it not so ?</i>
¿ Qué se me da á mi ?	<i>What do I care ?</i>
Hasta luego.	<i>Good-bye for the present.</i>
Es tres por cuatro y cuatro por tres.	<i>It is six to one and half a dozen to the other.</i>
Dar los primeros pasos.	<i>To break the ice.</i>
Cuanto menos se diga, tanto más pronto se remedia.	<i>Least said soonest mended.</i>
Le falta algún sentido.	<i>He's a little cracked.</i>
Sentir en el alma.	<i>To be exceedingly sorry.</i>

VOCABULARY.

un prestamista, <i>a lender</i>	sencillo, <i>simple</i>
el puchero, <i>the earthen pot used for cooking</i>	pelillos, <i>trifles</i>
el hilo, <i>the thread</i>	á cuestas, <i>on one's back</i>
la juventud, <i>the youth</i>	maduramente, <i>maturingly</i>
el ovillo, <i>the clew</i>	llevar á cabo, <i>to carry through</i>
el rincón, <i>the corner</i>	dejar dicho, <i>to leave word</i>
la chimenea { <i>the chimney</i> { <i>the fireplace</i>	poner * en limpio } <i>to make a fair copy</i> sacar en limpio } <i>to re-write</i>
el examen, <i>the examination</i>	borracho, <i>drunk (adj.)</i>
el cuidado, <i>the care</i>	proyectar, <i>to project</i>
la simpleza, <i>the simplicity</i>	contraer *, <i>to contract</i>
	faltar, <i>to be short, wanting</i>

EXERCISE 48.

1. Jamás ha llevado cosa ninguna á cabo la clase que ha vivido de manos á boca. 2. Los medios para llevarlo á cabo son muy sencillos. 3. Busca á un prestamista, lo que, si tiene éxito, es caer del puchero al fuego. 4. Puedes decidir la cuestión como quieras, sin reparar en pelillos. 5. De eso iba á hablar, pero tu precipitación me ha cortado el hilo. 6. Por cuanto puedo decir, es hombre de bien. 7. Llevaba el baul á cuestas. 8. Dejé dicho que iba á hacerle una visita. 9. ¡Cuánto echo de menos los días de mi juventud! 10. Decidió llevar á cabo una idea que había estudiado maduramente. 11. No hacían más que poner en limpio lo que les daba á copiar. 12. Por el hilo se saca el ovillo. 13. Estaba para decírselo á V. 14. Mañana voy á Sevilla por tener que asistir á las fiestas de semana santa. 15. En un rincón de la chimenea estaba sentada la ciega. 16. No es borracho pero está borracho. 17. Diez mil reales no son para despreciados. 18. El tiempo estaba frío. 19. ¿Que he de hacer? 20. ¿Qué éxito ha tenido V. en el examen?

1. He carried my bag (*maleta*) on his back. 2. You will not be able to carry through what you have projected. 3. I hope you (2nd pers.) will be successful in the examination. 4. Thou wilt never miss such a small thing. 5. Leave word (2nd pers.) that I am going to call (*pasar*). 6. Make a fair copy of this letter. 7. Tell him that I have much to do. 8. I must be there at 6 o'clock. 9. He has to be home before nine o'clock. 10. Good-bye until to-morrow. 11. Carry it (2nd pers.) on your back. 12. You must get (*ganar*) all you can, spend the least you can, and let (*hacer*) what you spend provide you with the best possible. 13. I only exact from you that this child do not miss the cares of his parents. 14. Was there nobody to prevent it? 15. Allow me to tell you that the purchase can be made with-

out contracting debts. 16. Let him buy what is wanting. 17. We are all in the secret, therefore it would not be discretion but simplicity to keep silence (*callarlo*). 18. You will be (2nd pers.) in your own home like a fish in the water. 19. Ask him to do it again. 20. We shall call again to-morrow. 21. I have to leave for Paris to-morrow.

LESSON 49.

USES OF *que*.

In a paper set some years ago by the Society of Arts the student was requested to state the different uses of *que*. To enable our learners to be able to answer the question we give examples of the various uses of this word. It is used (1) as a simple connecter, as shown in Lesson 33, as :—

Este es el libro que he comprado. *This is the book I have bought.*

El Sr. que estaba aquí. *The gentleman who was here.*

La carta que V. ha recibido. *The letter you have received.*

(2) as interrogative ; but notice that when not interrogative before a verb it is accompanied by **lo** or **de lo**, being used instead of **el cual**, etc., as :—

¿Qué es esto ? *What is this ?*

¿Qué hay ? *What is the matter ?*

¿Qué quiere decir esto ? *What does this mean ?*

Me ha dicho cosas duras, lo que me ha asfigido mucho. *He has said hard things to me which has troubled me much*

Hay en eso más de lo que se presume. *There is more in this than is presumed.*

Le he prestado mi libro español, lo que le ha gustado mucho. *I have lent him my book which has pleased him greatly.*

(3) as exclamative, in which cases it is often used additionally to emphasize the assertion, as :—

¡Qué hermosa ! *What a beautiful thing !*

¡Qué mujer tan arrogante ! *What an arrogant woman !*

¡Qué hermosa que eres ! *How beautiful thou art !*

¡Qué desgracia ! *What a misfortune !*

If the noun comes first the word **tan** is also used, as :—

¡Qué cosa tan hermosa ! *What a beautiful thing !*

If preceding a noun it is sometimes accompanied by **de**, as :—

¡Qué de tonterías hace ! *What foolish things he does !*

(4) to translate the 3rd person imperative (Lesson 44) where the word *let* is understood, as :—

- | | |
|-------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Que lo lleve él. | <i>Let him take it.</i> |
| Que las escriban ellos. | <i>Let them write them.</i> |
| Que lo haga ella. | <i>Let her do it.</i> |

In this case it is simply the conjunction introducing the subjunctive mood.

Idioms :—

tomar á pechos	<i>to take to heart.</i>
salirse con la suya	<i>to have one's own way.</i>
creo que sí (<i>no</i>)	<i>I think so (not).</i>
dar crédito	<i>to believe.</i>
dar á crédito	<i>to give on credit.</i>
pagar al contado	<i>to pay cash</i>
pagar de contado	<i>to pay immediately.</i>
á lo largo	<i>along, at a distance.</i>
á la larga	<i>in the long run.</i>

VOCABULARY.

el albedrío, <i>the freewill</i>	sagrado, <i>sacred</i>
el sentido, <i>sense.</i>	cojer la delantera, <i>to get the start</i>
á propósito, <i>purposely</i>	regatear, <i>to barter</i>
la niñez, <i>childhood</i>	azotar, <i>to beat</i>
cuan, <i>how</i>	renovar *, <i>to renew</i>
á cual más, <i>trying to outdo each other</i>	hacerle * falta, <i>to need</i>
imprevistos, <i>unforeseen</i>	

EXERCISE 49.

1. Más vale que se lo ofrezcamos ya convenientemente traducido.
2. Maldito lo que se me importa quien sea.
3. Obligó á su padre á que hiciese una casa.
4. Estábamos arrepentidos de nuestra ingratitud.
5. Si caben dudas respecto del verdadero nombre de los patagonés, algunas caben acerca de su nombre.
6. ¿Qué esperanza puede haber para tales personas?
7. ¡Cuán infamemente ha sido engañado!
8. No debemos permitir que nos cojan la delantera.
9. No hay que extrañar que temiese exponerse á una pérdida.
10. La parte alta de la provincia está siendo muy visitada.
11. No es negocio para regatear.
12. Desde mi niñez, me comenzaron á azotar á cual más podia.
13. Su corazón noble y generoso, se estaba sacrificando en aras (*altar*) de la amistad.
14. Dios le dió al hombre libre albedrío, mas le toma cuenta de todo.
15. Los guardé para atender á gastos imprevistos.

16. En las escuelas municipales darán comienzo hoy los examenes de fin de curso. 17. V. tiene la culpa, que no yo. 18. A qué no lo hace V. 19. ¿Qué diría V. si viniese? 20. ¿En qué está V. ocupado? 21. Lo hago, que quiera que no quiera.

1. The prize-giving took place in the drawing-room. 2. Sunday he kept in every sense as a sacred day. 3. I hope you (2nd person) will not have reason to repent. 4. I was tempted (*tuve tentación*) to go and see him and to make myself known to him. 5. We remained at the door of the room which we purposely left ajar (*entornada*). 6. That sacrifice, I replied, had to be asked and not exacted (*exigirse*). 7. I beg you (2nd person) not to do any such thing. 8. It is published in blue books and is given as testimony before the parliamentary commissions. 9. Will you really do it? 10. Let us renew again the thread of our interrupted story. 11. He arrived home, and ascending the stairs (*escalones*) three at a time (*de tres en tres*), entered (*penetrar en*) the office. 12. The duke emptied (*desocupar*) his cup and standing up (*ponerse en pie*) asked if he had done the letters (*despachar el correo*). 13. He needs boots; what size does he take (*cuantos puntos calza*)? 14. I left with hopes that I should soon return. 15. I want you to write him. 16. What a nice book that is! 17. What horrible weather! 18. Let him bring it to me to-morrow, without fail.

LESSON 50.

USES OF **Que** (*Continued*).

(5) It is used as a comparative, but is **lo que** before a verb, as :—

Es más rico que V. *He is richer than you.*

Es más rico de lo que V. cree. *He is richer than you think.*

(6) Used instead of **pero**, **porque**, **si** (*whether*), **cuando**, as :—

Esté V. hábil y consiga lo que pueda, *Be clever and get what you can and que yo me encargo del resto.* *(for) I will undertake the rest.*

Es que no quiero hacerlo. *But I do not want to do it.*

No es discípulo mio que si lo fuese— *He is not my pupil, for if he were—*

Que venga que no venga. *Whether he comes or not.*

Un día que estuve en la catedral. *One day when I was in the cathedral.*

(7) Used instead of **sino**, but only after **otro** or **más**, as :—

En este obra no se encuentra más mérito que el estilo. *In this work one does not find other merit than the style.*

En la cesta no había otra cosa que nn pedacito de pan duro. *In the basket there was nothing but a little piece of hard bread.*

(8) Used with **tener que**, **haber que**, to imply obligation, as :—

Tengo que salir. *I have to go out.*

Hay que hacerlo. *It must be done.*

(9) For *since*, referring to time, as :—

Hace 6 días que vinieron á vernos. *It is 6 days since they came to see us.*

(10) Used in other cases as shown in the following phrases :—

Creo que sí.	<i>I think so.</i>
Digo que no.	<i>I say not.</i>
Espero que sí.	<i>I hope so.</i>
Me ha dicho que sí.	<i>He has told me so.</i>
Por hermosa que sea.	<i>However beautiful she be.</i>
Por más dinero que se le envíe.	<i>However much money they send him.</i>
Tarde que temprano.	<i>Sooner or later.</i>
Por cierto que lo haré.	<i>I will certainly do it.</i>
Que llueva que no llueva.	<i>Whether it rains or not.</i>
Con que, hasta luego.	<i>Well, good-bye for the present.</i>
Con que vendré á las seis.	<i>Then I will come at six.</i>
Escrita que fué la carta.	<i>The letter being written.</i>
¡ Socorro ! ¡ qué me matan !	<i>Help ! murder !</i>
Eso sí que es buen modo de echarlo á perder.	<i>That is just the way to spoil it.</i>

(11) It commences contracted phrases where a verb is left understood, similar to Rule 4, as :—

Á que no lo acierta V. *I bet you don't guess it.*

EXERCISE 50.

1. Regresará mañana, cuando se le pondrá al corriente de la situación.
2. La noción popular, con respecto á la educación de un príncipe, está muy lejos de la realidad.
3. Este contratiempo ha aguado el gusto.
4. A pesar de todo esto, hacía su agosto.
5. Cúmplase la voluntad de Dios.
6. Cubría su cabeza un sombrero de hule, con ala ancha.
7. Se asegura que á principios del mes, los Reyes pasarán una temporada en la Isla de Wight.
8. Me consta que no le ha pagado V. un céntimo, desde que tuvo la desgracia de alquilárselo.
9. Estoy resuelto á acudir á otro tribunal.
10. He pasado los últimos cinco años ordenando papeles y haciendo cuentas.
11. Cuando le oigo, me dan ganas de poner entre sus manos y mi bolsillo una pareja de Guardias Civiles.
12. Padece grave afección del pecho y dicen que se morirá pronto.
13. No me hacen falta testimonios para creer, y sustentar, lo que sustento y creo, á puño cerrado.
14. La empresa que me está con-

fiada. 15. Es menester consolarnos y animarnos en todas las desgracias de la vida. 16. Parece que está de mal humor.

1. I have no objection to advancing it to him. 2. It cannot be forgotten. 3. All hope has disappeared (*desvanecerse*). 4. From whom have you (2nd pers.) bought it? 5. When (*en cuanto*) he receives the money the account will be paid (*liquidar*). 6. They say he is a good tailor who knows the cloth. 7. He goes to school every other night (*una noche sí y otra no*). 8. I slept, I do not know how long, and did not dream of anything. 9. His creditors do not dare to trouble him because they know it will be worse for them (*les saldría peor la cuenta*). 10. The child, on trying to make my horse go (*arrear á*) with a stick, received a kick from the animal on the head. 11. They showed the Minister letters and telegrams from several Chambers of Commerce. 12. Tolerance is the guiding star of life. 13. The visit was definitely arranged (*concertada*). 14. The result was foreseen. 15. He is asleep. 16. His children are deprived of the means of subsistence. 17. They are not yet sufficiently educated. 18. The first step is already taken towards prosperity. 19. It was necessary to choose (*optar*), and I preferred the request to the command (*precepto*).

VOCABULARY.

el contratiempo {	<i>the mishap</i>	á pesar de, <i>in spite of</i>
	<i>the mischance</i>	á puño cerrado, <i>firmly</i>
el hule, <i>the oilcloth</i>		aguar, <i>to water, to disturb or interrupt pleasure</i>
el ala (f.), <i>the wing, brim</i>		hacer * su agosto, <i>to make hay while the sun shines</i>
la temporada, <i>a certain length of time</i>		cubrir, <i>to cover</i>
un céntimo, <i>a cent</i>		acudir { <i>to have recourse to</i>
una pareja, <i>a couple</i>		<i>to repair to</i>
guardia civil, <i>armed police</i>		ordenar, <i>to put in order</i>
el pecho, <i>the breast, chest</i>		sustentar, <i>to sustain</i>
el acreedor, <i>the creditor</i>		soñar *, <i>to dream</i>
el palo, <i>the stick, cudgel</i>		
la Cámara de Comercio, <i>Chamber of Commerce</i>		

LESSON 51.

ADVERBS.

An adverb qualifies a verb, telling how, when, or where the action takes place. Many adverbs are formed from adjectives by adding

mente to the same, but if the adjective is one that changes for gender the termination **mente** is added to its feminine form. **Mente** equals the English **ly**, as :—

docto	<i>learned</i>	doctamente	<i>learnedly</i>
feliz	<i>happy</i>	felizmente	<i>happily</i>

When two or more adverbs ending in **mente** appear in the same sentence this termination is only added to the last, as :—

Habló y escribió clara, concisa, y elegantemente.
Es la verdad lisa y llanamente dicha.

The adverb is kept well to the front, or comes next to the verb, as :—

Sí es posible se lo mandaré mañana. *I shall send it if possible to-morrow.*
Siempre estudia bien su lección. *He always studies his lesson well.*

Muy, which is a contraction of **mucho**, cannot be used alone. It is then written in full, as :—

¿ Está V. enfermo ?	<i>Are you ill ?</i>
Si, mucho.	<i>Yes, very.</i>
¿ Sabe el francés ?	<i>Can he speak French ?</i>
Ni con mucho.	<i>Not by a very long way.</i>

Notice the irregularities of the following :—

Lo hace bien.	<i>He does it well.</i>
V. lo hace mejor.	<i>You do it better.</i>
Lo he hecho mal.	<i>I have done it badly.</i>
El lo ha hecho peor.	<i>He has done it worse.</i>

Idioms :—

Salir de un mal paso lo mejor posible.	<i>To make the best of a bad business.</i>
Estos dos cuadros forman pareja.	<i>These two pictures match.</i>
Hallarse como cual mejor.	<i>To be hale and hearty.</i>
Echar cara ó cruz por una cosa.	<i>To toss for a thing.</i>
Es llevar agua á la fuente.	<i>It is carrying coals to Newcastle.</i>
En atención á eso.	<i>In consideration of that.</i>
Muy por encima.	<i>Superficially.</i>
Faltar á su palabra.	<i>To break one's word.</i>
Cada uno á su gusto.	<i>Tastes differ.</i>
Gato maullador nunca fué cazador.	<i>Great talkers do little.</i>
Poner freno á eso.	<i>To put a stop to that.</i>

VOCABULARY.

luego, *immediately*
 corrida de toros, *bull fight*
 el pecado, *the sin*
 poco á poco, *little by little*
 rara vez, *rarely*

advertir *, <i>to warn, to give notice</i>
manejar, <i>to manage</i>
pesar, <i>to weigh</i>
acoger, <i>to take up (bills, etc.)</i>
morar, <i>to dwell</i>

EXERCISE 51.

1. Le hemos advertido repetidamente se manejase con cuidado.
2. No es bastante conocido en esta ciudad.
3. Sólo ha pagado los intereses.
4. Ha aseverado terminantemente que no es cierto.
5. Han pesado menos de lo que nos indicaba.
6. Está enferma y mucho.
7. Desafortunadamente ha comprado en tiempo poco propicio.
8. El azúcar está tambien buscado (*in demand*).
9. Estas mercancías se venden bien.
10. Anda muy lentamente.
11. Es sin duda lo mejor que hay.
12. Lo sentirá más tarde ó más temprano.
13. No parecería bien que se lo preguntase tan de seguida.
14. Esperaremos el pago luego despues de la entrega del envío.
15. No podemos de ningún modo (*possibly*) hacer más.
16. Que vengan que no vengan nos importa poco.
17. He leido su carta de V. con mucha atención.
18. Todavia no ha llegado el amigo.
19. No voy jamás á ver una corrida de toros.
20. No voy á España sino rara vez.
21. Siempre nos trae flores por la mañana.
22. ¿ Vendrá V. á vernos antes de salir para la América del sud?
23. ¿ Adónde iba V., cuando le vi?
24. No deje V. de venir mañana por la mañana.

1. You cannot state with surety that you have received it from them.
2. This is only (*tan solo*) a proof.
3. I have offered what I thought it was worth.
4. You will remember I did this solely on your solicitation.
5. I did not rightly (*bien*) understand you.
6. He would have done better to attend to his business.
7. Your drafts (*giros*) shall be promptly taken up.
8. Unfortunately I have accepted it already.
9. Besides that the cloth (*tela*) is worthless.
10. This happens frequently.
11. Do you (2nd) ever write to your mother?
12. Yes, I write very frequently.
13. Prices have been declining (*bajar*) little by little.
14. Sin exists wherever man dwells.
15. You must stay there.
16. He went about his work reluctantly (*de mala gana*).
17. He spoke so loudly that people glanced at him curiously.
18. He did it sooner than I expected.
19. Therefore (*por tanto*) I have to inform you of it.
20. He had scarcely (*no bien*) sold the goods when he received a better offer.
21. I asked merely to see if you knew how to translate the phrase.
22. Do not fail to come early.

LESSON 52.

VERBS GOVERNING PREPOSITIONS.

As stated in Lesson 47, Spanish verbs often govern prepositions different to the English, but no rule can be given to help the student in this matter. He must learn the differences by reading and practice. However, the acquirement of a correct knowledge of these prepositions is not so difficult as at first one is inclined to imagine.

There is a long list in the Academy Grammar, but it is not of much use to the English student, because the prepositions change to agree with shades of meaning.

We give underneath some of the commoner expressions :—

aborrecido de todos	<i>abhorred by all</i>
acabar de (<i>infinitive</i>)	<i>to have just</i>
acordarse de	<i>to remember</i>
alegrarse de	<i>to be glad</i>
alimentarse de	<i>to feed upon</i>
caminar por	<i>to walk along</i>
complacerse de (en)	<i>to be pleased with</i>
contar con	<i>to count upon</i>
consentir en	<i>to consent to</i>
cumplir con	<i>to perform, to keep (one's word, duty)</i>
dejar de	<i>to cease</i>
estar de viaje	<i>to be on a journey</i>
estar para	<i>to be ready (in the humour)</i>
estar por	<i>to be inclined</i>
estar con cuidado	<i>to be uneasy</i>
estar de cuidado	<i>to be very ill</i>
maravillarse de	<i>to wonder at</i>
ocuparse de	<i>to be occupied with (in)</i>
llenar de	<i>to fill with</i>
quedar de pies	<i>to remain on foot</i>
reirse de	<i>to laugh at</i>
temblar de	<i>to tremble with</i>
entremeterse en	<i>to meddle with</i>
llevar á cabo	<i>to carry through (project)</i>

VOCABULARY.

el contrincante, *the competitor*
 la chanza, *the jest, joke*
 el hipócrita, *the hypocrite*

la cuestión, *the question*
 la ayuda, *the help, assistance*
 á tiro de pistola, *within pistol shot*

al fin y al cabo, *in the long run*
 fuera, *out, outside*
 temblar, *to tremble*
 deslizar, *to slide*
 bostezar, *to yawn*
 arrancar, *to pull up, out; to set off*

tratar, *to try*
 aborrecer *, *to abhor*
 contar con *, *to reckon on*
 explicar, *to explain*
 obrar, *to act*

EXERCISE 52.

1. Me alegra mucho de saber que V. va á visitarnos.
2. Acabo de recibir noticias de él.
3. Eso sería abusar de la amistad.
4. De qué se rie V.?
5. El pobrecito temblaba de frío.
6. No hay que entremeterse en estas cosas.
7. Insiste en que vaya V. á verle.
8. Los obreros dejaron de trabajar á las cinco.
9. Desde entonces carezco de noticias de mis tíos.
10. Se acerca el tiempo en que cerramos nuestros libros.
11. Me temo que va deslizándose en el vicio.
12. Parécesme que se ha de tropezar con grandes dificultades para hacer eso.
13. Sin dejar de ver lo que se puede conseguir de este lado.
14. No puedo menos de confesar que mi contrincante tiene mucha razón.
15. No estoy para chanzas.
16. Se despidió septiembre con un dia soberanamente bello.
17. Bostezaba de hambre.
18. Arrancaron á correr.
19. Trató de despertar nuestras simpatías.
20. ¡Ya caigo en ello!
21. Al fin y al cabo saldrá V. perdiendo.
22. Lo ha hecho de propósito.
23. Eso está fuera de duda.
24. No aguantaré más tu insolencia.
25. Me he resuelto á hacerlo.

1. He does not consent to your going.
2. Cease troubling him.
3. What does he do each day?
4. Do you (2nd) remember me?
5. The hypocrite is abhorred by everybody.
6. I shall be glad to see him.
7. I reckon on your assistance.
8. He is going to get married to-morrow.
9. Fill the glass with water.
10. It is to be hoped that he is not so severe (*usar de tanto rigor*).
11. They have assured me that not later than last year one of his creditors died of hunger.
12. If much has been given to man to enjoy much more has been given him to suffer.
13. These are questions that cannot be explained.
14. He took it into his head to travel.
15. He said to me that it would be better to go together (*andar juntos*).
16. It is getting late.
17. It is very funny (*curioso*) how these things happen.
18. They were glad to see us.
19. They had just received them.
20. I cannot act in this manner.
21. We will carry out (*dar efecto á*) this promise.
22. How I miss my school-days.
23. I missed the train.
24. They were within pistol shot.
25. They were making fun of me.
26. The poor fellow died with hunger.

LESSON 53.

AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES.

In colloquial language the Spaniards, instead of employing adjectives, often add to words terminations which may imply them, but we advise the student to use these terminations sparingly. He can always use the describing word as in English. The commonest of the diminutives is **ito** (**ita**), which may imply smallness only or affection only, as :—

hermano	<i>brother</i>	hermanito	<i>little (dear) brother</i>
Juan	<i>John</i>	Juanito	<i>Johnny</i>
hijo	<i>son</i>	hijito	<i>little, or dear, son</i>
chico	<i>boy</i>	chiquito	<i>little boy</i>

Ilio, illa, express diminution coupled with disdain, as :—

mujer	<i>woman</i>	mujercilla	<i>little old woman</i>
cosa	<i>thing</i>	cosilla	<i>trifle</i>

Uelo, uela, express strongly the idea of disdain, as :—

mujerzuela	<i>ugly little woman (hag)</i>
------------	--------------------------------

Tenía Nápoles polizones que solian Naples had policemen who were
propinar á los vasaluelos algunos wont to give to their inferiors
cuantos garrotazos blows with a cudgel.

Entró en el gabinete un ser pe- A little ugly and grotesque man
queñuelo y grotesco. entered the sitting-room.

The general rule for the formation of diminutives is to add the termination to words ending in a consonant. Those ending in a vowel lose the same, but euphony must be considered always, which causes the use of additional letters in many instances, as : *jardin, jardincito ; flor, florecilla ; pájaro, pajarito (illo) ; viaje, viajecito ; tienda, tiendecilla ; ladrón, ladroncillo*. There is so much variety in the application of these diminutives that it is only by practice that one can acquire a good knowledge of their proper use.

Idioms :—

Ha hecho bien su nido.	<i>He has feathered his nest.</i>
Eso no vale un pito.	<i>That is not worth a straw.</i>
Estoy en ascuas.	<i>I am on tenter-hooks.</i>
Esa es harina de otro costal.	<i>That is quite another matter.</i>
En boca cerrada no entra mosca.	<i>A still tongue, a wise head.</i>
De mal en peor.	<i>From bad to worse.</i>

Está de pica.	<i>He has the huff.</i>
Hecho al pelo.	<i>Done to a T.</i>
Enviar recado.	<i>To send word by messenger.</i>
Echar una cana al aire.	<i>To enjoy oneself.</i>
Volar con sus propias alas.	<i>To paddle one's own canoe.</i>
Es acalorado.	<i>He is hot-headed.</i>
Al peor andar.	<i>At the worst.</i>

VOCABULARY.

la rebotica, <i>back room, behind shop</i>	la losa, <i>the flag (stone).</i>
el cristal, <i>the glass</i>	delgado, <i>thin</i>
la mirilla, <i>small window</i>	el platillo, <i>the saucer</i>
el piquete, <i>the pointed stake, pole</i>	la azotea, <i>the flat roof</i>
el farolillo, <i>the lantern</i>	el frasco, <i>the flask</i>
el suelo, <i>the ground</i>	usar, <i>to use</i>
el pocillo, <i>small well or vessel</i>	pregonar, <i>to call out (wares, etc.)</i>
la acera, <i>the footpath</i>	

EXERCISE 53.

1. Hablaba de la parte que cae en medio de las dos puertecitas que dan paso á la rebotica, cada una con su mirilla de cristal. 2. El boticario es un hombrecillo delgado. 3. Viste un levitón de dril y usa zapatillas. 4. Pregonaban sus mercancías á luz de un farolillo colgado en un piquete clavado en el suelo. 5. Llevaba en un pocillo dos cuartos de blandurilla (*pomatum*). 6. Para el cómodo paso del arrecife (*causeway, paved road*) á las aceras, hay losas, á modo de puentecillo, sobre las cunetas del camino. 7. Sobre la mesa estaba el velón y un jarrito de porcelana blanca con su platillo y tapadera (*movable cover*). 8. El artista se propuso que fuesen rayos de luz y le salieron varillas de paraguas. 9. Me quiere V. hacer el favor de escuchar una palabrita. 10. Bajo esta tienda, que lo es de campaña para las mocitas que tienen pretendientes callejeros. 11. Las casitas son casi todas de dos pisos, con azoteas, en las que se alza generalmente una torrecilla cuadrada. 12. Mi hijo tiene tres gatitos. 13. El jovencito ha dicho que volveria. 14. De un veladorcillo (*night-table*) cargado de vasos, frascos, y cajitas medicinales, tomó algo.

1. I saw her with the little doctor (*mediquito*) from whom she has got some coppers (*cuartos*). 2. I come about a little matter (*asuntillo*), and intend to return to-morrow. 3. When are you going to the watering-place (*baños*). 4. Let us go for a short walk. 5. Isabel, leave (2nd pers.) the canary alone (*en paz*). 6. What a grumbler (*gruñona*) you (2nd pers.) are to-day, Mary ! 7. It seems as if you cannot speak without quarrelling. 8. I

have been already three months in Madrid. 9. He asked me how long I thought of remaining in Spain. 10. How is it that you speak Spanish so well (*con tanta perfección*) ? 11. You are right, we ought to be in Madrid now. 12. How we shall sleep to-night after so much fatigue ! 13. Are you going to remove (*mudarse de casa*). 14. I had thought of going away but afterwards I changed my mind (*opinión*). 15. Will the procession take long to pass ? 16. I would like you to look at (*examinar*) my watch, as it has stopped (*dado en pararse*). 17. It is a man in the street calling out his wares (*mercancías*).

LESSON 54.

AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES (*Continued*).

The commonest of the augmentatives are **on**, **ote**, **azo**; and their feminine forms **ona**, **ota**, **aza**.

On implies largeness in size, as :—

caja	box	cajón (masc.)	large case
		hombre, hombrón	man, big man

Notice that feminine nouns ending in **a** generally become masculine when augmented by the termination **on**, as :—

cuchara	spoon	cucharón	large spoon, ladle
libro	book	librón	large book
mujer	woman	mujerona	large (big) woman
beata	hypocrite (fem.)	beatona	bigot (fem.)
pañuelo	handkerchief	pañolon	large kerchief

¡Qué borrachona es la gente de aquí!
How beastly drunken the people are here!

Ote is sometimes augmentative and at others diminutive, as :—

isla	island	islote	small island
hombre, hombrote	exceptionally big and fat man		

Azo carries the idea of both largeness and disproportion.

It is sometimes added to the augmentative **on** to increase the augmentation, as :—

¿Quién es aquel hombrón ?	Who is that big man ?
Es el marido de aquella mujercita.	He is the husband of that little woman.

Cómo, ¡es posible que tal hombronazo sea el marido de una mujer tan chica !

Acho, achón augment whilst conveying the accessory idea of disdain, as :—

vulgo *multitude*

vulgacho *mob*

Idioms :—

Le di una indirecta.	<i>I gave him a hint.</i>
Si á V. le parece, mándeselo.	<i>If you think fit send it to him.</i>
Ese vestido le sienta á V. bien.	<i>That dress suits you well.</i>
Se ha dejado en el tintero lo principal.	<i>The most important has been overlooked.</i>
Eso se comprende.	<i>That is understood.</i>
Se le antojó ir á verla.	<i>He took it into his head to go and see her.</i>
Estaba á pique de perderse.	<i>He was within an ace of getting lost.</i>
No cabe en él tal acción.	<i>He is above such an action.</i>
Quien hace cama con perros se levanta con pulgas.	<i>Avoid bad company.</i>
En largo camino paja pesa.	<i>On a long journey a straw counts.</i>
Salir á pedir de boca.	<i>To turn out to one's desire.</i>
Barato de ganas.	<i>Dirt cheap.</i>
Hijo sin dolor, madre sin amor.	<i>Spare the rod and spoil the child.</i>

VOCABULARY.

un matrimonio, <i>a married couple, man and wife</i>	la batalla, <i>the battle</i>
un cerdo (cerdazo), <i>a hog or pig</i>	un campamento, <i>a camp</i>
la fanega, <i>a bushel</i>	la lógica, <i>the logic</i>
la caña, <i>the cane, reed</i>	tunante, <i>cunning</i>
el arco iris, <i>the rainbow</i>	físico, <i>physical</i>
la naturaleza, <i>the nature</i>	escoger, <i>to choose</i> .
una taza, <i>a cup</i>	asentar *, <i>to place</i>

EXERCISE 54.

1. ¿ Cómo se llama ese animalazo ? 2. Eres un verdadero alcalde pregunton ; me mueles con tus preguntas. 3. Abra V., porque la portezuela está muy premiosa (*tight*). 4. Como la felicidad no es posible cabe escoger entre los diferentes géneros de felicidad. 5. Apuradillo anda el pobrecito á causa de lo que le ha sobrevenido. 6. Pasa todito el día leyendo esos libracos. 7. Muy á propósito es que se llame hijastrá á la hija de un primer matrimonio. 8. En esa familia no se cuenta ninguna modistilla tunanta. 9. Muy crueles son, por lo general, las madrastras. 10. Desde allí no se ve, por impedirlo el montecillo en que se asienta la noria. 11. Llevaba en la mano

un cazolón (*stew-pan*). 12. ¡Cuántos cerdazos se ven en esta aldea! 13. Tambien figura en la habitación un cajón que contiene quince ó veinte fanegas de trigo. 14. Tienen las gallinas en un jaulón de caña, debajo de la mesa. 15. No hay acción mala que no sea castigada. 16. No hay vicio que sea por Dios consentido largo tiempo. 17. ¿Ha visto el arco iris?

1. That depends on the nature of the joke. 2. I thought it rather strong. 3. How late you come this week? 4. Has the postman come? 5. What church is this? 6. I desire to know, and consequently (*por lo mismo*) I cannot do other than ask. 7. Are you (2nd pers.) accustomed to take anything before breakfast? 8. From half-past eleven to twelve I take lunch. 9. How glad I am! 10. Mary, why have you (2nd pers.) not brought a cup for the child? 11. What are we going to do there all day? 12. Life is a great battle and the world a camp. 13. How does that rich old fellow (*ricacho*) pass his time? 14. He won't live with his step-mother and step-brothers. 15. The logic of facts is rigorous. 16. In the moral world as in the physical world each thing produces its like. 15. Good-bye! I must not remain an instant longer here. 16. There is nothing that exalts man as the law of duty (*deber*). 19. In the hearts of the unhappy there is no room for (*no cabe*) egotism. 19. They left me in the lurch (*atolladero*). 21. Be sure that your wicked actions will be punished.

LESSON 55.

AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES (*Continued*).

The diminutive, although formed generally from primitive nouns, can also be formed from adjectives, participles, and adverbs, e.g. :—

Parecía el chico muertecito de frío.	<i>The boy seemed half dead with cold.</i>
La aldea de que habla V. está lejitos de aquí.	<i>The village of which you speak is rather far from here.</i>
Pepe se encontraba apuradillo.	<i>Joe was rather in difficulties.</i>
La mujercita iba aproximándose al buen viejecito.	<i>The little woman was approaching the little old man.</i>
Callandito entró la madre en la alcoba.	<i>Very quietly the mother entered the bedroom.</i>
Ramón al llegar aquí parecía muertecito de frío.	<i>When Ramón arrived here he seemed overcome with cold.</i>

Attention must be called to the fact that these terminations are not necessarily augmentatives and diminutives.

The following phrases will illustrate how they are used with other meanings, e.g. :—

Amenazó matarle de un pistoletazo.	<i>He threatened to shoot him (dead).</i>
Muchas veces les propinaban garrotazos para recordárselo.	<i>He gave them blows (with a stick) to remind them of it.</i>
Oíd, oíd los latidos de este corazón ; cada uno de ellos es una puñalada mortal que me asesina.	<i>Listen to the beatings of my heart ; each is a mortal stab that is killing me.</i>
Se daba de calabazadas por averiguar el secreto.	<i>He laboured in vain to investigate the secret.</i>
¿ Estará mejor ese dinero, despilfaradota, en manos de ese bribonazo que en las nuestras ?	<i>Will that money be better, extravagant woman, in the hands of that rascal than in ours.</i>

We have shown rather lengthily how the augmentatives and diminutives are used, but again advise the student not to try and use them to any extent.

Idioms :—

Coger agua en cesto.	<i>To labour in vain.</i>
Descubrir el cotarro.	<i>To let the cat out.</i>
Dar una dentada.	<i>To take a snack.</i>
Un día sí y otro no.	<i>Every other day.</i>
Eso salta á la vista.	<i>That is quite plain.</i>
Poner tachos.	<i>To find fault.</i>
Al revés.	<i>Wrong way about.</i>
Echar una mano.	<i>To lend a hand.</i>
A sabiendas.	<i>Knowingly.</i>

VOCABULARY.

la cal, <i>the lime</i>	de sopetón, <i>suddenly</i>
la llamarada, <i>the flash</i>	resguardar, <i>to protect</i>
un silletazo, <i>blow with a chair</i>	funcionar, <i>to work (mec.)</i>
las megillas, <i>the cheeks</i>	hacer * las veces de, <i>to act as</i>
el asa (f.), <i>the handle</i>	mantenerse *, <i>to keep oneself</i>
el hombro, <i>the shoulder</i>	durar, <i>to last</i>

EXERCISE 55.

- Quiero que tome el sol todito el día.
- No debemos reparar en pelillo.
- Se presentó de sopetón en el salón.
- Se fué á la sordina (*sneaked off*).
- Lo hace á hurtadillas (*on the sly*).
- Estaba junto á una cuba (*pail*) lleno de cal y con un brochón en la mano.
- Parece que va á descansar un poquito.
- No le falta más que dar las boqueadas (*gasp*).
- Abandonó la sala despidiendo infernales llamaradas sus ojillos.
- Si asoma por la puerta, sin que yo le llame, le rompo la cabeza de un sille-

tazo. 11. Tenía tan frescas las megillas, como si sus rosas contaran solo allí veinte primaveras. 12. Toda su ciencia se reduce á una porción de chascarrillos (*tricks*). 13. Fué de puntillas al rincón del pie de la sala y cogió el velón por el asa. 14. Tenía los ojos resguardados por las bovedillas de cristales azules de unos espejuelos. 15. Estaban vestidas con trajes de coco y con los pañolones caídos sobre los hombros. 16. Tienes tres cuartos para mandar por media panilla (*measure*) de aceite. 17. Tiró del cordón de la campanilla. 18. Hay florecillos de campo y flores de estufa (*stove*).

1. I cannot abide the fellow (*palurdo*). 2. This machine does not work well. 3. I am acting as father to him. 4. Can you afford to buy this? 5. You (2nd) should not give ear to such nonsense. 6. It is easier said than done. 7. It is very funny (*curioso*) how these things happen. 8. It does not hold good (*aplicable*) in this case. 9. He deserves to be treated with more respect. 10. Lost time cannot be regained (*recuperar*). 11. Much remains to be done (*por hacer*) to establish that system. 12. I only aspire to prove to you my gratitude. 13. The first step is already taken towards prosperity. 14. The boy is asleep. 15. They are not yet sufficiently educated. 16. You will be able to keep yourself afterwards until you get some work. 17. I would do it even if (*aun cuando*) it did not please me. 18. Well, here you have (*hé aquí*) the case in two words. 19. The eldest was not (*no llegaba*) fifteen, and both were very simple. 20. There was a moment when he felt ashamed for being there, but that lasted only an instant.

LESSON 56.

Todo may be a noun (*the whole, everything*), an adjective, or an adverb (*wholly, completely, entirely*). On the other hand the English *all* may be translated differently in Spanish. The learner will doubtless understand this better from the phrases we give immediately below, viz. :—

Todos los hombres.	<i>All the men.</i>
Todo su dinero se ha gastado.	<i>All his money has been spent.</i>
Toda la familia goza de salud.	<i>All the family is enjoying good health.</i>
Jugar el todo por el todo.	<i>To stake all for all.</i>
Soy todo oídos.	<i>I am all attention.</i>
Estoy en un todo de acuerdo con V.	<i>I am quite of your opinion.</i>
¿Es ese todo?	<i>Is that all.</i>
Es absolutamente lo mismo.	<i>It is absolutely the same.</i>
De todos modos.	<i>By all means.</i>

Meterse en todo.	<i>To meddle in everything.</i>
Me es todo uno.	<i>It is all the same to me.</i>
Tanto mejor.	<i>All the better.</i>
De repente.	<i>All at once.</i>
¿ Fuma V. ?	<i>Do you smoke ?</i>
¡ Del todo !	<i>Not at all !</i>
Cruzaban por todas partes y en todas direcciones las palomas.	<i>The pigeons were crossing everywhere and in all directions.</i>
Olvidado de si, hecho todo amor, todo fé, todo esperanza su alma vigorosa descomponía la luz del cielo (Castelar).	<i>Forgetful of himself, being all love, all faith, all hope, his soul changed the light of heaven.</i>
El miedo que la devoraba, la soledad en que yacía, da falta de luz, la falta de aire, sus ideas, sus remordimientos, sus dolores, todo era horrible en aquella su triste y aflictiva situación (Hermana de la Caridad).	<i>The fear that devoured her, the solitude in which she lay, the want of light, the deficiency of air, her ideas, her remorse, her pain, all was horrible in that, her sad and distressful situation.</i>

Demasiado (*too, too much*) agrees with the noun when an adjective. As an adverb it remains invariable.

Idioms :—

Echar un remiendo á la vida.	<i>To take refreshment.</i>
No hay tal.	<i>There is no such thing.</i>
Vengamos al caso.	<i>Let us come to the point.</i>
Vamos todos á la vez.	<i>Let us all go together.</i>
Ponerse de acuerdo.	<i>To come to an understanding.</i>
Un corte de vestido.	<i>A dress length.</i>
Con que, adiós.	<i>Well, then, good-bye.</i>
Á puerta cerrada.	<i>Privately.</i>
Este color cae bien con el otro.	<i>This colour goes well with the other.</i>
De mala fé.	<i>Crafty.</i>

VOCABULARY.

de repente, <i>all at once</i>	pretender, <i>to try for</i>
rústico, <i>rustic</i>	dispensar, <i>to dispense, give</i>
elegancia, <i>elegance</i>	sanar, <i>to cure</i>
averiado, <i>damaged</i>	exagerar, <i>to exaggerate</i>

EXERCISE 56.

1. Todo estaba en silencio. 2. Ante todo traiga V. el libro consigo.
3. Ella parecía toda una señora. 4. Con todo eso no me es simpático. 5.

Yo se lo diré á V. todo. 6. Ha conseguido todo lo que pretendia. 7. Estuvieron rondando la tienda toda la noche. 8. Muy malos se encuentran todos, le dijo la chica. 9. Eso es de todo punto imposible. 10. Todo tiene remedio en este mundo menos la muerte. 11. Consiste en oponerse á todo é impedirlo todo. 12. En todas partes, en todas las naciones cultas, es una cosa admitida el descanso dominical. 13. Todo esto le falta. 14. Eso es todo lo que me ha dicho. 15. ¿ Los tiene V. todos? 16. Han escrito todas las cartas. 17. Toda la familia está en Paris. 18. Todos salieron á la vez. 19. No me gusta del todo. 20. Siempre se mete en todo. 21. Se atreve á todo. 22. Tiene facultad de permitirlo todo por sí mismo. 23. Es temido de todos. 24. Esto abraza todo. 25. Dios es que dispensa de todo. 26. Todo el dia está llora que llora. 27. Hoy es el dia de todos los santos. 28. Es una medicina que sana todo. 29. Echa V. todo á perder. 30. Lo haré con todo el alma. 31. ¿Qué hacen Vs. todos? 32. Todos lloraron.

1. All that you (2nd) say is quite true. 2. I left word that all the invoices should be posted the same day. 3. All said the same thing. 4. I have said all that is necessary. 5. I can tell you all about it in a few words. 6. My exercise was very difficult and I could not do it all. 7. Has she washed all the clothes? 8. It is not at all suitable for a man. 9. Everybody says so. 10. All at once a great noise was heard. 11. I knew it all along. 12. Everything there is rustic, rude (*tosco*), and without elegance. 13. He exaggerates all that he says. 14. Have you done all that I told you? 15. All the goods are damaged. 16. He has been all over Spain. 17. All say the same thing. 18. All that he said was the purest truth. 19. I have read them all but do not like them. 20. Is that all he gave you? 21. You know them all better than I. 22. Have you found all the books you wanted? 23. I will go for all your forbidding (*á pesar de V.*). 24. We are all in the same boat (*trance*). 25. All laughed heartily (*á más no poder*). 26. I must do it at all hazards (*á toda costa*). 27. All left the room.

LESSON 57.

If a sentence commences by naming an object it is necessary to put the dative or accusative pronoun before the verb, **lo** or **la**, if a thing; **le** or **la**, if a person; as:—

Este señor le vi en Paris.

I saw this gentleman in Paris.

El resto del día lo pasamos en com-
pañía de sus sobrinos.

*The rest of the day we passed in the
company of his nephews.*

Este edificio lo construyó el Sr.
Martin.

*This building was constructed by
Mr. Martin.*

Esta casa la construyó Juan.

John built this house.

El verdadero alcalde lo es Don Thomás. *The real mayor is Mr. Thomas.*

Toda la noche la he pasado en blanco. *I have passed all the night without sleep.*

We mentioned in Lesson 22 that the Spanish present participle cannot have a preposition before it. The English present participle preceded by a preposition is translated in Spanish by the infinitive, but the present participle may be used if the preposition is omitted, as :—

Perdió su colocación por hablar con demasiada libertad. *He lost his situation through speaking with too much freedom.*

Mandándolo por el tren lo recibirá hoy. *Sending it by train he will receive it to-day.*

Al leer la carta. *On reading the letter.*

Al ir al correo. *On going to the post.*

Después de haberlo dicho. *After having said it.*

Al verle echó á correr. *On seeing him he set off running.*

Al llegar á casa se le pidió cuentas. *On arriving home he was called to account.*

En is sometimes found before a present participle, e.g. :—

Caséme en teniendo edad para tomar estado.

I got married when I was sufficiently old to set up house.

Le pidió, en acabando de comer, le contase los sucesos.

He asked him on finishing to eat that he should relate the events.

Y en diciendo esto se puso el sombrero y salió.

And on saying this he put on his hat and went out.

The Spanish infinitive is often used as a substantive (Lesson 22), e.g. :—

El comenzar las cosas es tenerlas medio acabadas. *To commence things is to have them half done.*

El guardar palabra es el primer deber del comerciante. *To keep faith is the first duty of the merchant.*

Craso y lamentable error es el creer que la mujer no ama en su vida que una sola vez. *It is a crass and lamentable error to think that woman only loves once in her life.*

Idioms :—

Por poco no me caigo. *I nearly fell (just now).*

Poco faltaba para que no se cayese. *He nearly fell (past tense).*

Á mi me faltaba poco para llorar. *I was nearly crying.*

Pagar en la misma moneda.	<i>To give like for like.</i>
De 8 días á esta parte.	<i>Within these last 8 days.</i>
Poner por escrito.	<i>To put down in writing.</i>
Hacer por.	<i>To try, to do one's best.</i>
Caer en gracia.	<i>To become a favourite.</i>
Dar memorias.	<i>To give one's respects.</i>
Tomar á uno entre cejas.	<i>To take a dislike to anyone.</i>

VOCABULARY.

los lutos, <i>the mourning dress</i>	el retrato, <i>the likeness (photo)</i>
la jaca, <i>the hack</i>	dar * vueltas, <i>to turn round</i>
la pista, <i>the track</i>	girar, <i>to turn</i>
la rueda, <i>the wheel</i>	retratarse, <i>to have one's likeness taken</i>
los cangilones, <i>buckets of draw-well</i>	cometer, <i>to commit</i>
la butaca, <i>armchair, lounge in theatre</i>	guardar la palabra, <i>to keep one's word</i>
el gozo, <i>the joy</i>	seguir *, <i>to follow</i>
la obra, <i>the work</i>	

EXERCISE 57.

1. Ahora duerme que es un gusto el mirarle. 2. Al entrar en el salón vió que ya había llegado ella. 3. Haciendo esto complacerá á su madre. 4. No pudo resistir mucho tiempo al deseo de hablar con ella. 5. Todo esto hizo sin reflexionar que los hacia más infelices. 6. En vez de estudiar no hace más que reirse. 7. Empezaremos por darle decorosa sepultura y por comprarnos los lutos. 8. Seguiremos por sacarnos de esta casa. 9. No tiene hoy medios de acercarse al dinero. 10. Buena ocasión se te presenta de hacer méritos á los ojos de la hija. 11. Eso estaba ya hecho antes de saber que había V. venido. 12. V. me ha engañado al decirme que era mi amigo. 13. La jaca da vueltas por la pista para que al girar la rueda vacien los cangilones. 14. El chico al escuchar la pregunta se detuvo. 15. ¿Qué dia vas á ir á retratarte? 16. Me ha honrado invitándome á tomar el gazpacho (*a Spanish soup*). 17. Se sale al jardín, bajando dos escalones, por una puerta que está al lado de la ventana. 18. Pensando en todo confusamente, sin fijarse en nada, permaneció en la butaca, sin variar de postura cerca de una hora. 19. Al decir esta volvió á echarse en la cama. 20. Diez días más navegaron sin tomar puerto, playa, ó abrigo alguno.

1. On arriving he will find all prepared. 2. You (2nd pers.) want to take from (*arrancar*) me the joy of doing a good work. 3. Instead of studying he passes the time talking and smoking. 4. On passing the girl he spoke to her with tenderness. 5. I will keep the likeness without showing it to anybody. 6. He went out without taking any notice of what I said. 7. He

has committed even the villainous action of sending thee a suborner (*tercera*). 8. After contemplating for some instants the beauty of the night. 9. With the object of coming to an arrangement (*acuerdo*). 10. True patriotism does not consist of (*en*) praising all our affairs as they are. 11. It consists of accepting them as they are, and in redoubling our energies until we have them (*hasta dejarlas*) as they ought to be. 12. It is by living with people that we get to know them best. 13. To keep one's word is a duty not to be laid aside (*imprescindible*). 14. You (2nd pers.) can assist by writing some of the letters. 15. By doing this you will save much time and labour. 16. This school was built by Messrs. Alvarez.

LESSON 58.

PAST PARTICIPLES.

We have said already (Lesson 16) that the past participle with **haber** remains invariable, but with other verbs it changes to show the gender and number of the noun, as :—

Los géneros que he comprado.	<i>The goods we have bought.</i>
El chico está vestido.	<i>The boy is dressed.</i>
Las mujeres están vestidas.	<i>The women are dressed.</i>
La casa que hemos visto.	<i>The house we have seen.</i>
La casa está bien construida.	<i>The house is well built.</i>

(See the lessons on passive voice.)

Tener, which is occasionally used with past participles, carries the idea of possession, as :—

Tengo escrita la carta. *I have the letter written.*

Used alone the past participle agrees with the noun, as :—

Obra empezada medio acabada. *Work begun half done.*

Some verbs have two past participles, one regular, used to refer to an action, and the other irregular, descriptive, used with **ser**, **estar**, and some other verbs. See Lesson 63.

These irregular past participles cannot be used with **haber**, except :—

roto	frito	preso	provisto
<i>broken</i>	<i>fried</i>	<i>captured</i>	<i>provided</i>

The past participle is often elegantly used at the beginning of a sentence, as :—

Acabada la cena fuimos al teatro.	<i>Supper over we went to the theatre.</i>
Hechas que fueron los preparativos.	<i>The preparations being made.</i>
Advertido del peligro pudo evitarlo.	<i>Being warned of the danger he was able to avoid it.</i>
Leido el libro, haga V. el favor de devolvérmelo.	<i>When you have read the book kindly return it to me.</i>
Arreglada la nota, nos despedimos de la huéspeda.	<i>The account paid, we bade good-bye to the landlady.</i>
Dicho esto, volvió á echarse en la cama.	<i>This being said he got in bed again.</i>
Dada esta orden, se puso de pie y añadió, vamos al comedor.	<i>Having given this order he got up and added : " Let us go to the dining-room ".</i>

Idioms :—

Las ventanas caen al jardín.	<i>The windows overlook the garden.</i>
Chanzas aparte.	<i>Joking aside.</i>
De aquí en adelante.	<i>Henceforward.</i>
Estar con cuidado.	<i>To be uneasy.</i>
Estar de cuidado.	<i>To be very ill.</i>
Dar largas.	<i>To prolong (an affair).</i>
Venir de perilla.	<i>To come at the nick of time.</i>
Hacer de tripas corazón.	<i>To pluck up courage.</i>
Á la hora en punto.	<i>Exact to time.</i>
Jugar limpio.	<i>To play fair, to act fair.</i>

VOCABULARY.

el huésped, <i>the guest</i>	la botella, <i>the bottle</i>
el discurso, <i>the speech</i>	el suceso, <i>the event</i>
el ayuntamiento, <i>the Town Council</i>	hundir, <i>to fall down, sink</i>
el terreno, <i>the ground (land)</i>	liar, <i>to wrap, bind</i>
el cuello, <i>the collar</i>	apegar, <i>to attach</i>
la capa, <i>the cloak</i>	sostenerse *, <i>to lean on</i>
el ánimo, <i>the spirit (mind)</i>	

EXERCISE 58.

1. Las intrigas políticas fraguadas en algunos centros, y secundadas por parte de la prensa, no afectan en nada á la buena marcha de los asuntos del país. 2. Esta tarde se ha celebrado otro festival en honor de los ilustres huéspedes. 3. Se han hundido varias casas. 4. Como estaban deshabilitados los edificios no ha ocurrido por fortuna ninguna nueva desgracia personal. 5. Todo la noche ha estado nevando. 6. El discurso fué muy aplaudido. 7. Como estaba anunciado esta mañana, regresó el Rey. 8.

Quedó autorizado el Ayuntamiento para ganar dichos terrenos al mar. 9. Varios Sres. de la ciudad han bajado á la estación á la hora del correo de Madrid. 10. Llevan subido el cuello del gabán. 11. Algunos van liados en capas. 12. Se ven algunos viajeros asomados á las ventanillas. 13. Ha mejorado mucho la situación de nuestra clase. 14. Ella estaba apegada á sus devociones. 15. Tenían las fuerzas perdidas y los ánimos caídos. 16. Nadie nace enseñado. 17. Sosténte sobre lo que has comido. 18. El libro está encuadernado de rojo. 19. Ayer la iglesia fué quemada.

1. The letters have been sent to him.
2. The ladies arrived yesterday.
3. Are the children dressed ?
4. She had put on a dress suitable for riding.
5. The houses were unoccupied.
6. It had been a stormy night.
7. We have had very bad weather.
8. The bottles had been broken.
9. The windows are all broken.
10. Do you want the eggs boiled or fried ?
11. They had their coat collars up.
12. We could hardly have imagined such an event.
13. You (2nd pers.) are authorized to do this.
14. Why was it not done before ?
15. After having dined we went to the theatre.
16. She was greatly displeased.
17. Your watch is always late.
18. His task was finished (*cumplida*).
19. He had lost sight of them.
20. He had not yet finished resting.
21. She was seated at the end of the room.
22. She had gone out.
23. I have saved this money for my daughter.
24. He opened the window suddenly.
25. She had waited for him in vain.
26. Why was the door closed ?
27. He was told to close the window.
28. The Council was authorized to do it.
29. It has been raining all night.

LESSON 59.

In Lesson 18 we saw the manner of translating comparatives, and it now remains to consider the superlatives.

The English endings *er* and *est* are translated by the definite article before the Spanish comparative, as :—

El es el más rico.	<i>He is the richest.</i>
Ella es la más hermosa.	<i>She is the prettiest.</i>
Eso es el más pequeño.	<i>That is the smallest.</i>

Muy (*very*) before adjectives and adverbs, is sometimes replaced by the affix **ísimo**, which is rather more expressive than **muy**. The adjective ending in a vowel drops the same before adding this termination, as :—

Ha viajado muchísimo. *He has travelled very much.*

In South America **muy mucho** is common, but not in Spain.

The following alterations take place before adding the above termination, e.g. :—

Co changes to **qui**, and **go** to **gui**, whilst **z** is always changed to **c** before **e** and **i**, as :—

rico, rich	muy rico or riquísimo, very rich
largo, long	muy largo or larguísimo, very long
feliz, happy	muy feliz or felicísimo, very happy

The termination **ble** becomes **bil**, as *amable* (amiable), *amabilísimo*; adjectives in *iente* and *erto* drop the **i**, as :—

valiente	valentísimo
cierto	certísimo

Note the following irregular forms, to which others of less importance might be added :—

Bueno, bonísimo; antiguo, antiguísimo; fuerte, fortísimo; nuevo, novísimo; fiel, fidelísimo; sabio, sapientísimo.

Note that the preposition *in* after a superlative is rendered **de**, as :—

Es el más hermoso de la ciudad. *It is the prettiest in the town.*

To adverbs ending in *ly* add **ísimamente**, as :—

beautifully, hermosísimamente

Adjectives ending **bre** take an irregular termination, as :—

celebre, celeberrimo

The student is advised to use all these terminations very sparingly, being always able to use in their place the adverb **muy**.

Idioms :—

Ser de dos baces.	<i>To be two-faced.</i>
Meter bulla.	<i>To make a noise.</i>
El pro y el contra.	<i>The for and against.</i>
No tiene quite.	<i>There is no help for it.</i>
En un repente.	<i>By a sudden impulse.</i>
Tanto monta.	{ <i>It is as good as the other.</i> <i>It is all the same.</i>
Se mete en lo que no le va, ni le viene.	<i>He meddles in things that don't concern him.</i>
Tal para cual.	<i>Tit for tat.</i>
Salen caros los géneros ingleses en —	<i>English goods are dear in —</i>

VOCABULARY.

el esposo, <i>the husband</i>	ngasajado, <i>welcomed</i>
el don, <i>the gift</i>	aplastado, <i>crushed</i>
la púa, <i>the sharp point</i>	ambos, <i>both</i>
una soba, <i>a rub</i>	fastidiarse, <i>to get weary</i>
tal, <i>such</i>	

EXERCISE 59.

1. Si supones que es el esposo que elige mi libérrima voluntad, ya debías empezar á respetarlo como tal. 2. Los marinos fueron agasajadísimos. 3. Murieron aplastadas varias personas. 4. El frío es intensísimo en ambas poblaciones. 5. Del vino se bebe muchísimo. 6. Tristísima está la chica. 7. Dificilísimamente podrá V. hacer eso. 8. No pudieron resistir al deseo de ver cosa tan extraordinaria. 9. Me fastidio de no saber en que pasar el tiempo. 10. Exhalan sus suavísimos perfumes. 11. Es importantísima la enseñanza que da su lectura. 12. Las descripciones de las localidades son exactísimas. 13. Tienen el don felicísimo de vivir siempre en la hora presente y de no pensar en el día de mañana. 14. Inquietísima se movía en el banco, como si éste se hallara erizado de puas. 15. Al decirlo, una sospecha terrible cruzó por su mente. 16. Al verla en tal actitud y al leer en sus ojos la reconvención (*reproach*), cayó en la cuenta de que estaba en descubierto con ella. 17. Dele V. una soba de bencina.

1. The horse is a very useful animal. 2. It is extremely beautiful. 3. He studies very much. 4. It is a very rich family. 5. The work is most beautifully done. 6. She acted most prudently. 7. This bird is very handsome. 8. I like the house very much ; it is very handsome. 9. They speak Spanish very much better than I. 10. It is an awfully dangerous task. 11. They had a great deal of bread, but an exceedingly small quantity of wine. 12. We have a good number of books, but very few good ones. 13. We have a good many of them. 14. I have no objection to pay them a visit. 15. What do you (2nd pers.) think of this matter ? 16. I was not thinking of anything. 17. This is the largest building in this town. 18. She is the prettiest girl in the city. 19. After posting the letters he went to the theatre. 20. He has the very happy gift of being able to say the right thing. 21. Very much beer is drunk in England. 22. It is the best I have seen. 23. They seem to be the happiest couple in the village.

LESSON 60.

PECULIAR VERBS.

Some Spanish verbs are used more elegantly with the dative pronouns than with the prepositions *for*, *about*, etc., as in English, as :—

Pidió un libro á su amigo.	<i>He asked his friend for a book.</i>
Se lo compró á él.	<i>He bought it from him.</i>
¿ Creen ellos ganar dinero á este hombre ?	<i>Do they think they will win money from this man ?</i>
Dígaselo V.	<i>Tell him about it.</i>
¿ Le ha pagado V. el sombrero ?	<i>Have you paid him for the hat ?</i>

Valer (Lesson 26) is often used to translate the English *to be better*, as :—

Más vale tarde que nunca.	<i>Better late than never.</i>
Más valdría hacerlo en seguida.	<i>It would be better to do it at once.</i>
V. vale más que él.	<i>You are better than he.</i>
Más vale poco y bueno que mucho y malo.	<i>It is better to have a small quantity good than a large quantity bad.</i>

Note carefully the translation of the English *there to be* (Lesson 21) by **haber**, impersonal verb. This verb is used in the 3rd person singular in all tenses, whether the noun be singular or plural, viz : *hay*, there is ; *había*, there was ; *habrá*, there will be ; *habría*, there would be ; *ha habido*, there has (have) been : *si hubiera*, if there were. Examples :—

Comeré uvas si las hay.	<i>I will eat grapes if there be any.</i>
¿ Cuántas piezas hay ?	<i>How many pieces are there ?</i>
Hay hombres que creen todo lo que se les dice.	<i>There are men who believe all they are told.</i>
Si hay algunos se los mandaré.	<i>If there are any I will send them to you.</i>

The verb **matar**, *to kill*, has the remarkable peculiarity of appropriating sometimes for its past participle that of **morir**, as :—

El pobre se ha matado.	<i>The poor fellow has killed himself.</i>
Fué muerto por un amigo.	<i>He was killed by a friend.</i>
Su marido le ha muerto.	<i>Her husband has killed her.</i>
Un caballo matado.	<i>A saddle-galled horse.</i>

Idioms :—

Verse (estar) entre la espada y la pared	<i>To be between two fires</i>
Casa de huéspedes	<i>Boarding house</i>
Hacer cara	<i>To face</i>
Al canto del gallo	<i>At daybreak</i>
Montar un reloj	<i>To wind a clock (watch)</i>
Pasar por alto	<i>To overlook, not to take notice</i>
Hacer su agosto	<i>To make hay while the sun shines</i>
Venir á pelo	<i>To come to the purpose</i>
Lo tengo en el pico de la lengua	<i>I have it on the tip of the tongue</i>

VOCABULARY.

el objeto, <i>the object</i>	el vidrio, <i>the glass, window</i>
el cautiverio, <i>the captivity</i>	la desgracia, <i>the misfortune</i>
la usura, <i>the usury</i>	el término, <i>the end</i>

el siglo, *the century*
 el remedio, *the remedy*
 la corrida de toros, *bullfight*
 una treintena, *about thirty*
 el encendio, *the fire*
 la reunión, *the meeting*
 el accionista, *the shareholder*
 diversos, *diverse, sundry*

superior, *top, higher*
 por el pronto, *for the moment*
 apremiar, *to urge*
 emprender, *to undertake*
 amilanar, *to frighten, terrify*
 no haber * remedio
 no tener * remedio } *it can't be helped*

EXERCISE 60.

1. ¿ A quién se lo ha comprado V. ? 2. Habló de traer á casa los diversos objetos útiles que andaban por esos mundos de Dios, en los cautiverios de la usura. 3. Saldremos calladitos para que no nos sientan. 4. Habría valido más esperar. 5. Ni aun si se hiciera eso no nos encontraríamos por ello en mejor situación. 6. Habló en voz tan alta que todos le miraron con curiosidad. 7. Cerró la puerta en cuya parte superior había dos vidrios pequeños. 8. Entre dos desgracias elijo la que menos apremia. 9. Yo le presenté el pro y el contra de la cuestión. 10. De un minuto á otro podían pedírselos. 11. Quien no se estima á sí mismo jamás tendrá ánimo para emprender algo bueno. 12. Se lo han pedido á ellos. 13. No pidamos al ser humano más de lo que el ser humano puede dar de sí. 14. Su enfermedad no tenía más término que la muerte, y los minutos se le hacían siglos. 15. Más vale saber que hacer. 16. Gracias, no hay de qué. 17. No hay que dejarse amilanar por las desgracias. 18. Por el pronto me quedo con ello. 19. No había remedio para eso.

1. Have you paid for the clothes ? 2. Have you told him about it ?
 3. Go and pay for the tickets. 4. Did you see a bullfight ? 5. Please pay for the handkerchiefs I had yesterday. 6. How many were there in the room ? 7. There would be about thirty. 8. Has there been a fire in the city ? 9. From whom have you (2nd pers.) bought the clock ? 10. I will perhaps tell him of it to-morrow. 11. Who ordered it of you ? 12. Could there be anything worse than that ? 13. There may be a strike. 14. One must (*hay que*) take care. 15. One must not tell him so. 16. Never were there friends so good as they. 17. There will be a meeting of shareholders. 18. I will give you (2nd pers.) some wine if there is any. 19. Was there anyone in the room ? 20. We saw him this day fortnight. 21. He understands single and double entry book-keeping (*por partida simple y doble*). 22. Has there been an accident ? 23. It would be better not to do it. 24. Am I not as worthy as he ? 25. It is not worth doing. 26. Did you pay for the flowers ? 27. In the large room there were three windows. 28. Will there be room for us all ?

LESSON 61.

The student is reminded that in using a foreign tongue he has to put *ideas* into words and not simply to translate words ; that is to say, he must *think* in the foreign idiom. We therefore advise him to read as much Spanish literature as possible, so that he may observe and remind himself continually of the shades of meaning which exist between the English and the Spanish methods of expressing ideas.

The following phrases will help him to see how some verbs are chosen to suit particular cases, e.g. :—

Solo tenemos que <i>agregar</i> que la clase ha de ser buena.	<i>We have only to add that the quality must be good.</i>
Hemos <i>añadido</i> los intereses al capital.	<i>We have added the interest to the capital.</i>
<i>Sume</i> todas las partidas que aparecen en esta cuenta.	<i>Add all the items that are in this account.</i>
Esto <i>aumentará</i> mis obligaciones hacia Vd.	<i>This will add to my obligations to you.</i>
Tuve el gusto de <i>escribirle</i> el 10 ct.	<i>I had the pleasure to address you on the 10th inst.</i>
Haga V. el favor de <i>dirigirme</i> las cartas á la lista del correo.	<i>Please address my letters to "poste restante".</i>
Este cargamento le será <i>consignado</i> á V.	<i>This cargo will be addressed to you.</i>
Tendrá que <i>sufrir</i> la pérdida.	<i>He will have to bear the loss.</i>
No puedo <i>soportar</i> esto por más tiempo.	<i>I cannot bear it any longer.</i>
No puedo <i>aguantarle</i> del todo.	<i>I cannot bear him at all.</i>
Nos permitimos <i>llamar</i> su atención á este artículo.	<i>We beg to call your attention to this article.</i>
Han sido <i>convocados</i> los acreedores.	<i>The creditors have been called together.</i>
Ellos dicen ser nuestros amigos.	<i>They call themselves our friends.</i>
Sírvase V. volver mañana.	<i>Please call to-morrow.</i>
Guarde V. mi equipaje hasta que vengan por él.	<i>Keep my luggage until they call for it.</i>
Idioms :—	
Tener presente.	<i>To bear in mind.</i>
Puerta de dos hojas.	<i>Folding-door.</i>
Me da rabia.	<i>It annoys me excessively.</i>
Adiós, hasta otro rato.	<i>Good-bye for the present.</i>

A ratos perdidos.	<i>In leisure hours.</i>
Lo que no se puede remediar se ha · de aguantar.	<i>What can't be cured must be en- dured.</i>
No hacer juego.	<i>Not to match (colours, etc.).</i>
Ha hecho bien su nido.	<i>He has feathered his nest.</i>
Mirar de hito en hito.	<i>To look at fixedly.</i>
Dar de mano.	<i>To lay aside.</i>

VOCABULARY.

el ojo, <i>the eye</i>	colocar, <i>to place</i>
mella, <i>impression</i>	romper, <i>to break</i>
los grillos, <i>fetters, irons</i>	cobrar ánimo, <i>to pluck up courage</i>
la volandera, <i>the runner</i>	vencer *, <i>to conquer</i>
el duplicado, <i>the duplicate</i>	estar * á pie, <i>to stand</i> .
el exceso, <i>excess</i>	agarrar, <i>to take hold</i>
la maleta, <i>the travelling bag</i>	tener * lugar, <i>to take place</i>
la obra, <i>the work (book)</i>	quitar á, <i>to take from</i>
la falta, <i>the want</i>	limpiar, <i>to clean</i>
los medios, <i>the means</i>	hacer * falta, <i>to want</i>
en frente, <i>in front</i>	dar * oídos, <i>to listen</i>
enojarse, <i>to shrink</i>	

EXERCISE 61.

1. ¿Cuándo se hará V. pagar? 2. Esto se le pasará. 3. La industria corre parejas (*hand in hand*) con el buén éxito. 4. Más ven cuatro ojos que dos. 5. Recibi noticias de él esta mañana. 6. No hemos podido hacer mella en su ánimo. 7. Echaron grillos al prisionero. 8. Por ahora no me hace falta. 9. No es cosa de reir. 10. No sacó nada por su trabajo. 11. No sé en donde encontrará todo este dinero. 12. Trata de conseguirse relaciones en esta. 13. Ahora la volandera funciona mejor. 14. Temo que se encoja al lavarlo. 15. Lo he vuelto á colocar en su lugar. 16. Tenemos que mantener apariencias. 17. Los cambios se han quedado firmes esta semana. 18. Sostendré mi palabra. 19. Guarde V. el duplicado del certificado. 20. Reclaman todo nuestro tiempo. 21. Estos cajones ocupan demasiado lugar. 22. Tenga V. cuidado de no romperlo. 23. Cobre V. ánimo y venza sus difficultades. 24. ¿Ha venido V. á pie? 25. Esperaremos ver primero las nuestras. 26. Le doy á V. muchas gracias por la molestia que se ha tomado.

1. Will you be able to get them for me? 2. Please keep it until I call again. 3. He was standing in front of the class. 4. Ask him to call at the post-office. 5. Call (2nd pers.) the waiter. 6. You must put up with his excesses. 7. Pass it to new account. 8. I told him to stand up. 9. Leave (2nd

pers.) it here until we return. 10. Have you returned it to him? 11. Take hold of the umbrella. 12. The meeting will be held next Friday. 13. Take it from him. 14. Take the travelling bag to the station. 15. Do you like the works of Galdós? 16. Do as you like. 17. He is much liked by his companions. 18. Did you get the coat cleaned? 19. What did you get for your trouble? 20. Did he get the situation? 21. How did you (2nd pers.) get on last week at the examination? 22. Did you see him fall? 23. I nearly fell. 24. We are in want of time. 25. For want of a better we will take the one offered. 26. They both went (*llevar*) the same way. 27. He lives above his means. 28. I thought you would not give ear to it. 29. Ring the bell (*campanilla*).

LESSON 62.

Words ending in **a**, **d**, **ion**, unless indicating trades or professions peculiar to men, are feminine, except the following :—

<i>anagrama</i>	<i>anagram</i>	<i>idioma</i>	<i>language</i>
<i>antípoda</i>	<i>antipode</i>	<i>mapa</i>	<i>map</i>
<i>axioma</i>	<i>axiom</i>	<i>paradigma</i>	<i>paradigm</i>
<i>clima</i>	<i>climate</i>	<i>planeta</i>	<i>planet</i>
<i>cometa</i>	<i>comet</i>	<i>poema</i>	<i>poem</i>
<i>día</i>	<i>day</i>	<i>prisma</i>	<i>prism</i>
<i>diagrama</i>	<i>diagram</i>	<i>problema</i>	<i>problem</i>
<i>dilema</i>	<i>dilemma</i>	<i>síntoma</i>	<i>symptom</i>
<i>diploma</i>	<i>diploma</i>	<i>sistema</i>	<i>system</i>
<i>dogma</i>	<i>dogma</i>	<i>sofá</i>	<i>sofa</i>
<i>drama</i>	<i>drama</i>	<i>sofisma</i>	<i>sophism</i>
<i>enigma</i>	<i>enigma</i>	<i>tema</i>	<i>theme</i>
<i>epígrama</i>	<i>epigram</i>	<i>viva</i>	<i>hurra or cheer</i>
<i>guardarropa</i>	<i>wardrobe</i>		
<i>ardid</i>	<i>trick</i>	<i>huésped</i>	<i>guest</i>
<i>ataud</i>	<i>coffin</i>	<i>sud</i>	<i>south</i>
<i>césped</i>	<i>turf</i>		
<i>embrío</i>	<i>embrio</i>	<i>escorpión</i>	<i>scorpion</i>
<i>gorrión</i>	<i>sparrow</i>	<i>serampión</i>	<i>measles</i>
<i>bastión</i>	<i>bastion</i>		

Words of other terminations are masculine, except the following and a few which signify females or the professions, etc., generally applied to women, also those ending in **umbre** :—

E.—ave	<i>bird</i>	<i>laringe</i>	<i>larynx</i>
azumbre	<i>a measure</i>	leche	<i>milk</i>
base	<i>basis</i>	legumbre	<i>vegetable</i>
calvicio	<i>bald place</i>	lente	<i>lens</i>
calle	<i>street</i>	liebre	<i>hare</i>
carne	<i>flesh</i>	llave	<i>key</i>
catástrofe	<i>catastrophe</i>	lumbre	<i>fire</i>
certidumbre	<i>certainty</i>	menguante	<i>ebb tide</i>
clase	<i>class</i>	mente	<i>mind</i>
clave	<i>key (of book)</i>	molicie	<i>effeminacy</i>
corriente	<i>stream</i>	muerte	<i>death</i>
corte	<i>court</i>	nieve	<i>snow</i>
creciente	<i>flood tide</i>	noche	<i>night</i>
cumbre	<i>summit</i>	parte	<i>part, portion</i>
especie	<i>species</i>	peste	<i>plague</i>
estirpe	<i>race</i>	pirámide	<i>pyramid</i>
falange	<i>phalanx</i>	planicie	<i>plain</i>
fase	<i>phase</i>	plebe	<i>rabble</i>
fé	<i>faith</i>	progenie	<i>progeny</i>
fiebre	<i>fever</i>	sangre	<i>blood</i>
frente	<i>forehead</i>	serie	<i>series</i>
fuente	<i>fountain</i>	serpiente	<i>serpent</i>
gente	<i>people</i>	suerte	<i>chance</i>
hambre	<i>hunger</i>	superficie	<i>surface</i>
hélice	<i>screw (of steamer)</i>	tarde	<i>afternoon</i>
indole	<i>temper</i>	torre	<i>tower</i>
ingle	<i>groin</i>	trípode	<i>tripod</i>
intemperie	<i>unseasonableness</i>	urdimbre	<i>warp</i>

I.—Metrópoli, *metropolis*.

L.—Cal, *lime*; capital, *metropolis*; cárcel, *prison*; credencial, *credential*; col, *cabbage*; hiel, *gall*; miel, *honey*; piel, *skin*; sal, *salt*; señal, *signal*; vocal, *vowel*.

N.—Cargazón, *cargo*; crin, *mane*; imagen, *image*; razón, *reason*; sartén, *frying pan*; sazón, *season*; sien, *temple*.

O.—Mano, *hand*; nao (poetical), *ship*; seo (prov.), *cathedral church*.

R.—Flor, *flower*; labor, *work*.

S.—Bilis, *bile*; crisis, *crisis*; hipótesis, *hypothesis*; diócesis, *diocese*; mies, *corn crop*; res, *head of cattle*; sintaxis, *syntax*; tesis, *thesis*; tisis, *consumption*; tos, *cough*.

U.—Tribu, *tribe*.

Z.—Codorniz, *quail*; coz, *kick*; cruz, *cross*; faz, *face, visage*; haz,

bundle ; hez, dregs ; hoz, sickle ; luz, light ; nariz, nose ; niñez, childhood ; nuez, nut ; paz, peace ; perdiz, partridge ; pez, pitch ; pómez, pumice ; raiz, root ; tez, complexion ; vez, time ; voz, voice.

Also all nouns denoting abstract qualities, as :—

palidez, paleness, etc.

The names of rivers are masculine ; those of kingdoms, provinces, cities, etc., take generally the gender of their termination. The letters of the alphabet are feminine.

There are some other exceptions besides those mentioned, but they are not of frequent use.

The following nouns have different meanings ; one signification when masculine and another when feminine :—

	MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
aroma	<i>perfume</i>	<i>acacia</i>
atalaya	<i>warder of tower</i>	<i>watch tower</i>
ayuda	<i>assistant</i>	<i>help</i>
bestia	<i>blockhead</i>	<i>beast</i>
canal	<i>strait</i>	<i>channel, kennel</i>
capital	<i>funds</i>	<i>capital (city)</i>
calavera	<i>thoughtless fellow</i>	<i>skull</i>
cólera	<i>cholera</i>	<i>anger</i>
cometa	<i>comet</i>	<i>kite</i>
consonante	<i>rhyme</i>	<i>consonant</i>
consueta	<i>prompter</i>	<i>notebook</i>
corneta	<i>bugler</i>	<i>horn</i>
corriente	<i>current (month)</i>	<i>river</i>
corte	<i>edge</i>	<i>court</i>
creciente	<i>crescent (arms)</i>	<i>half-moon</i>
cura	<i>priest, minister</i>	<i>cure</i>
descendiente	<i>descendant</i>	{ <i>slope</i> <i>declivity</i>
doblez	<i>fold, wrinkle</i>	<i>falsehood</i>
dote	<i>gift (of nature)</i>	<i>dowry</i>
falange	<i>finger-joint</i>	<i>phalanx</i>
fantasma	<i>chimera</i>	<i>scarecrow</i>
frente	<i>front</i>	<i>forehead</i>
gallina	<i>coward</i>	<i>hen</i>
guarda	<i>soldier</i>	<i>body of soldiers</i>
guardia	<i>soldier (guard)</i>	<i>female guardian</i>

	MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
haz	<i>bundle, faggot, sheaf</i>	{ <i>face of cloth</i> <i>face of earth</i>
hortera	<i>shopman</i>	<i>trough</i>
justicia	<i>judge</i>	<i>justice</i>
lengua	<i>interpreter</i>	<i>tongue</i>
levita	<i>levite</i>	<i>coat</i>
llama	<i>the llama</i>	<i>flame</i>
margen	<i>of a book</i>	<i>of a river</i>
máscara	<i>masked man</i>	<i>mask</i>
menguante	<i>wane of moon</i>	<i>ebb</i>
mimbre	<i>willow branch</i>	<i>willow</i>
moral	<i>mulberry tree</i>	<i>moral</i>
orden	<i>arrangement</i>	{ <i>order</i> <i>ecclesiastical order</i>
parte	<i>report</i>	<i>part</i>
pendiente	<i>earring</i>	<i>slope</i>
pez	<i>fish</i>	<i>pitch</i>
tema	<i>theme</i>	<i>stubbornness</i>
tilde	<i>tilde</i>	<i>trifle</i>
trompeta	<i>trumpeter</i>	<i>trumpet</i>
vista	<i>custom house officer</i>	<i>sight</i>
vocal	<i>voter</i>	<i>vowel</i>
zaga	<i>last of a file</i>	<i>step at the back of a carriage</i>

There are a few others of less frequent use.

Note the irregularity in the formation of the feminine of the following nouns :—

abad, abbot	abadesa, abbess
actor, actor	actriz, actress
baron, baron	baronesa, baroness
caballero, gentleman	dama, lady
caballo, horse	yegua, mare
canónigo, canon	canonesa, canoness
cantor, singer	cantatrix (cantora), female singer
carnero, ram	oveja, ewe
diácono, deacon	diaconesa, deaconess
duque, duke	duquesa, duchess
elector, elector	electriz, electora, female doctor, electress
embajador, ambassador	embajadora, embajatrix, ambassadress
emperador, emperor	emperatriz, empress
gallo, cock	gallina, hen

héroe, <i>hero</i>	heroína, <i>heroine</i>
hombre, <i>man</i>	mujer, <i>woman</i>
padre, <i>father</i>	madre, <i>mother</i>
poeta, <i>poet</i>	poetisa, <i>poetess</i>
profeta, <i>prophet</i>	profetisa, <i>prophetess</i>
rey, <i>king</i>	reina, <i>queen</i>
toro, <i>bull</i>	vaca, <i>cow</i>
yerno, <i>son-in-law</i>	nuera, <i>daughter-in-law</i>

Idioms :—

Querer decir.	<i>To mean.</i>
Dicho y hecho.	<i>No sooner said than done.</i>
Por fas ó nefas.	<i>Right or wrong.</i>
Faltar á su palabra.	<i>To break one's word.</i>
Estar mano sobre mano.	<i>To be idle.</i>
Estar en ascuas.	<i>To be on thorns.</i>
Saber de buena tinta.	<i>To know on good authority.</i>
De hoy en ocho.	<i>This day week.</i>
De oídos.	<i>By hearsay.</i>
De buenas á buenas.	<i>Freely, willingly.</i>
De buenas á primeras.	<i>Without ceremony.</i>

VOCABULARY.

el traje, <i>the dress, suit</i>	el alumno, <i>the pupil</i>
el manjar, <i>the food</i>	la obediencia, <i>the obedience</i>
un puchero, <i>a glazed earthen pot</i>	la regla, <i>the rule</i>
el puchero, <i>a standing dish in Spanish countries</i>	la especie, <i>the kind, species</i>
el asado, <i>the roast beef</i>	estrenar { <i>to put on for the first time</i>
las verduras, <i>the vegetables</i>	<i>to do anything for the first time</i>
las legumbres, <i>pot herbs</i>	á ver, <i>let us see</i>
un par, <i>a pair, couple</i>	acostumbrar, <i>to accustom</i>
el elogio, <i>the praise</i>	en efecto, <i>just so</i>

EXERCISE 62.

1. ¿ He entrado yo á interrumpir vuestra conversación ? 2. No tal ; hablábamos de cosas indiferentes. 3. ¿ Me cambiará V. esto ? 4. No tengo inconveniente. 5. ¿ No has enviado á llamar la modista ? 6. Si, pues sé que tu preparabas á papá la sorpresa de estrenar un traje nuevo el día de su santo. 7. En efecto, ya tengo aquí la tela : á ver si te gusta. 8. El Señor D. José ¿ está en casa ? 9. Lo que es ahora, no. 10. Hágame Vd. el favor de entregarle cuando vuelva esta tarjeta. 11. Tiene que volver al minuto ;

puede V. pasar adelante y esperarle si gusta. 12. Se le ha pasado aviso de que le están esperando unos señores. 13. ¿Qué hay de nuevo? 14. Nada, absolutamente nada, que yo sepa al menos. 15. Quisiera que examinase V. mi reloj, pues ha dado en pararse. 16. ¿Qué clase de manjares son los que más le gustan? 17. Me gusta el puchero, me gustan los asados de toda especie, y las verduras y las legumbres. 18. Ahora me acuerdo que debo escribir un par de cartas. 19. No cabía de gozo la madre al oír tales elogios. 20. Concluido el examen, leyó en voz alta la clasificación que se había hecho del mérito de cada uno de los alumnos.

1. They had already begun the autumn examinations.
2. On opening the door he raised his eyes.
3. The father accustoms them from an early age (*muy niños*) to obedience and work.
4. She began to prepare lunch for her husband.
5. Have you paid for the clothes?
6. Am I not as good as he (*valer*)?
7. Has there been a fire?
8. Ask her for it.
9. Who ordered you to do it?
10. Who ordered it from you?
11. How many will there be there?
12. There cannot be a reply until the day after to-morrow.
13. I told him to pay for it.
14. Why did you not tell her to buy it?
15. Have you told them about it?
16. Is there anything new?
17. I have not been there for five years.
18. He said he would pay you when he saw you.
19. I should prefer to buy them myself.
20. Will there be enough wine?
21. I think it is better to go and see them.
22. We are not used to such language.
23. We were about 35 in the class.
24. There were about 55 in the room.
25. It will have to be done.
26. Words ending in *ty* can generally be made Spanish by changing this termination to *dad*.
27. Can you speak Spanish well now?
28. Practice is worth more than grammatical rules.

LESSON 63.

All proper past participles, used with **haber**, end in **do**, excepting those mentioned in Lesson 14.

There are many irregular past participles, but the same are adjectives and can only be used with **ser**, **estar**, and **quedar**, excepting the following which are regularly used with **haber**, viz. :—

roto, broken; frito, fried; preso, taken prisoner; provisto, provided;
e.g.—

La ventana está rota.

The window is broken.

Ha roto (rompido) la ventana.

He has broken the window.

Ha omitido una palabra.

He has omitted a word.

Una palabra está omisa.

A word is omitted.

Estaba absorto.

He was amazed.

Aquel que salta más alto sin caer es
el electo.

*He who jumps the highest without
falling is the chosen one.*

CONSTRUCTION.

The genius of the Spanish language allows a departure in some cases from the natural rules of construction, and so long as sense and perspicuity do not suffer there is ordinarily no fixed position for any of the parts of speech. The natural construction requires that the subject precede the verb ; that the noun go before the adjective ; that the verb antecede the adverb ; that the governing word precede the one governed.

In an affirmative sentence the subject may precede or follow the verb, as :—

La madre está aquí. *The mother is here.*

Ya ha venido la madre. *The mother has already come.*

Interrogatively subjects commonly come after the verb, being preceded by the noun object, if there is one, as :—

¿ Lo mandó su Sr. padre ? *Did your father send it ?*

¿ Mandó el libro su Sr. padre ? *Did your father send the book ?*

Adverbs come before or after the verb, as :—

Aquí se vende vino. *Wine is sold here.*

¿ Se vende vino aquí ? *Do they sell wine here ?*

Mañana venderemos los géneros. *We shall sell the goods to-morrow.*

Le veré á V. mañana por la mañana. *I will see you to-morrow morning.*

Ya he tomado diez lecciones. } *I have already taken 10 lessons.*

He tomado ya diez lecciones. }

In compound tenses the adverb can never be placed between the auxiliary verb and the past participle.

The adverb **recientemente** (*newly, recently*), drops its last three syllables before past participles, as :—

recién venido recién casado recién llegado.

Idioms :—

Decir por decir. *To talk for the sake of talking.*

Ir de puntillas. *To go on tiptoe.*

Á más tardar. *At the latest.*

Andar á ciegas. *To grope.*

El negocio ha salido bien. *The business has turned out well.*

Lo doy por hecho. *I take it as done.*

Quedar en hacer una cosa. *To agree to do anything.*

Estar para hacer una cosa.	<i>To be about to do a thing.</i>
Estar por hacer una cosa.	<i>To be inclined to do a thing.</i>
Dejar de hacer algo.	<i>To leave something undone.</i>
Dejar hacer algo.	<i>To let something be done.</i>

VOCABULARY.

la aguja, <i>the needle</i>	la delantera, <i>the start, lead</i>
el montón, <i>the heap</i>	el castigo, <i>the punishment</i>
la paja, <i>the straw</i>	escabullirse, <i>to slip away</i>
la vuelta, <i>the change (cash)</i>	darse prisa, <i>to hasten</i>
la altivez, <i>the arrogance</i>	comprar á ciegas, <i>to buy blindly</i>
el concepto, <i>the idea</i>	reconocer *, <i>to recognize</i>
la gira, <i>the picnic</i>	desde luego, <i>straightway</i>
el desliz, <i>the slip</i>	

EXERCISE 63.

1. Se había escabullido como se pierde una aguja en un montón de paja.
2. No podía tener amor á nadie más que á sí mismo. 3. Ahí van cien reales; no quiero vuelta.
4. El chico le parecía desde luego tan despejado que resolvió cultivar su talento.
5. Se le vió continuamente aliviando al desvalido.
6. ; Un cuarto para él! me dijo, mirándome de hito en hito (*from head to foot*) con altivez y con desprecio.
7. Se ha celebrado el último concierto.
8. Nunca podrá emplearse mejor que en esta ocasión.
9. Lástima es que no les haga V. ese obsequio.
10. No pedimos que economicen y amontonen sus ganancias puramente para economizar y amontonar.
11. Se empeñaron (*persisted*) en que yo las acompañara.
12. Volvióse á echar (*lie down*) y tardó muy poco en quedarse de nuevo dormido.
13. Estas dos señoras en nada se parecen una á otra.
14. Sin cumplimientos, venga V. cuando quiera.
15. No está demás se lo diga Vd.
16. Nos ha tomado la delantera.
17. Fué un desliz de la lengua.
18. Los muertos no cuentan mentiras.
19. Ya que la casa se quema, calentémonos.
20. El negocio se ha aguado.

1. They took a short walk along the footpath from the house to the corner.
2. I recognize that I merit punishment, but suspend it a little.
3. Amongst those beggars there are many who beg for the sake of not working.
4. There remain two other methods to mention.
5. The journey was made under a burning sun.
6. It may be said that she did no more than try it on.
7. This is what is called beginning where it ought to end.
8. Such is the conception in which he is held.
9. They exchanged notes respecting the picnic.
10. He could not understand that you were unfortunate.
11. Without having at their side anyone (*quien*) to dare to censure

the slightest (*más minima*) of their acts. 12. As I had a little money I did not hasten to look for a new situation. 13. The spectators are impatient. 14. In order that we get good results in the undertaking confided to us. 15. Have you any loose cash on you? 16. The window is broken. 17. Cheap things are always dear. 18. I do not want to buy a pig in a poke. 19. Leave word that I have arrived. 20. That is not to the point. 21. He gained his point.

NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

cero	0	diez y seis	16
uno, una	1	diez y siete	17
dos	2	diez y ocho	18
tres	3	diez y nueve	19
cuatro	4	veinte	20
cinco	5	veinte y uno }	21
seis	6	veintiuno	
siete	7	treinta	30
ocho	8	cuarenta	40
nueve	9	cincuenta	50
diez	10	sesenta	60
once	11	setenta	70
doce	12	ochenta	80
trece	13	noventa	90
catorce	14	ciento	100
quince	15		
doscientos, as	200	mil	1000
trescientos, as	300	dos mil	2000
cuatrocientos, as	400	tres mil, etc.	3000, etc.
quinientos, as	500	mil ciento	1100
seiscientos, as	600	mil doscientos	1200
setecientos, as	700	cien mil	100,000
ochocientos, as	800	un millón	a million
novecientos, as	900	dos millones	2 millions

These numbers are invariable, excepting **uno**, and 200 to 900. **Uno** loses the final vowel before a masculine noun singular, as :—

un hombre, una mujer	<i>A man, a woman</i>
doscientos hombres	200 <i>men</i>
doscientas mujeres	200 <i>women</i>

Uno and **una** drop the final vowel in compound sentences, as :—

cuarenta y un hombres	41 men
cincuenta y un casas	51 houses

Millón takes **un**, but **ciento** and **mil** do not take this article, as :—

cien hombres	100 men
mil pesetas	1000 pesetas
miles de pesetas	thousands of pesetas

Ordinal numbers are not so frequently used in Spanish as in English, and excepting **primero** (*first*) they are generally replaced by the cardinals, as :—

el primero de enero	<i>the 1st January</i>
el dos de abril	<i>the 2nd April</i>

Ordinals are mostly used in the enumeration of the chapters of a book, and up to **undécimo** with names of sovereigns, etc., the cardinals being used for the higher numbers.

Primero and **tercero** lose the final vowel when coming immediately before a masculine noun singular, as :—

el primer libro, el tercer dia, etc.			
primero	<i>first</i>	décimo tercio	<i>13th</i>
segundo	<i>second</i>	décimo cuarto, etc.	<i>14th, etc.</i>
tercero	<i>third</i>	vigésimo	<i>20th</i>
cuarto	<i>fourth</i>	trigésimo	<i>30th</i>
quinto	<i>fifth</i>	cuadragésimo	<i>40th</i>
sexto	<i>sixth</i>	quinquagésimo	<i>50th</i>
séptimo	<i>seventh</i>	sexagésimo	<i>60th</i>
octavo	<i>eighth</i>	septuagésimo	<i>70th</i>
noveno (nono)	<i>ninth</i>	octogésimo	<i>80th</i>
décimo	<i>tenth</i>	nonagésimo	<i>90th</i>
undécimo	<i>eleventh</i>	centésimo	<i>100th</i>
duodécimo	<i>12th</i>		

The ordinal numbers always agree in gender and number with the noun to which they refer, and may be placed either before or after same.

Collective numbers :—

un par	<i>a pair</i>
una decena	<i>ten, or about ten</i>
una docena	<i>twelve or about twelve</i>

una quincena	<i>about 15</i>
una veintena	<i>about 20</i>
un centenar	<i>about 100</i>
un millar	1000

Multiplicatives :—

simple	<i>single</i>	quintuplo	<i>5 fold</i>
doble	<i>double</i>	séxtuplo	<i>6 fold</i>
triple	<i>treble, or 3 fold</i>	séptuplo	<i>7 fold</i>
cúadruplo	<i>4 fold</i>	óctuplo	<i>8 fold</i>

Once is translated **una vez**; twice, **dos veces**, etc.

Fractional numbers :—

un medio	$\frac{1}{2}$	un dozavo	$\frac{1}{12}$
un tercio	$\frac{1}{3}$	un trezavo	$\frac{1}{13}$
un cuarto	$\frac{1}{4}$	un catorzavo	$\frac{1}{14}$
un quinto	$\frac{1}{5}$	un quinzavo	$\frac{1}{15}$
un sexto	$\frac{1}{6}$	un diez y seisavo	$\frac{1}{16}$
un séptimo	$\frac{1}{7}$	un diez y sietavo	$\frac{1}{17}$
un octavo	$\frac{1}{8}$	un diez y octavo	$\frac{1}{18}$
un noveno	$\frac{1}{9}$	un diez y nonavo	$\frac{1}{19}$
un décimo	$\frac{1}{10}$	un veintavo	$\frac{1}{20}$
un undécimo	$\frac{1}{11}$		
un onzavo	$\frac{1}{12}$		

Higher numbers add **vo** to the cardinals except,

un centavo $\frac{1}{100}$ un milésimo $\frac{1}{1000}$

The hours :—

la una	<i>1 o'clock</i>
la una y cuarto	<i>1·15 o'clock</i>
la una y media	<i>1·30 o'clock</i>
las dos menos cuarto	<i>1·45 o'clock</i>
las tres	<i>3 o'clock</i>
las cuatro, etc.	<i>4 o'clock, etc.</i>

Days of the week :—

domingo	<i>Sunday</i>
lunes	<i>Monday</i>
martes	<i>Tuesday</i>
miércoles	<i>Wednesday</i>
jueves	<i>Thursday</i>
viernes	<i>Friday</i>
sábado	<i>Saturday</i>

The months :—

enero	<i>January</i>	agosto	<i>August</i>
febrero	<i>February</i>	setiembre	<i>September</i>
marzo	<i>March</i>	septiembre	
abril	<i>April</i>	octubre	<i>October</i>
mayo	<i>May</i>	noviembre	<i>November</i>
junio	<i>June</i>	diciembre	<i>December</i>
julio	<i>July</i>		

The seasons :—

la primavera	<i>Spring</i>
el verano	<i>Summer</i>
el estío	
el otoño	<i>Autumn</i>
el invierno	<i>Winter</i>

Colours :—

verde	<i>green</i>	gris	<i>grey</i>
amarillo	<i>yellow</i>	crudo	<i>grey (natural)</i>
encarnado	<i>red</i>	plomo	<i>slate</i>
rojo		canario	<i>canary</i>
blanco	<i>white</i>	oro	<i>gold</i>
negro	<i>black</i>	azul	<i>blue</i>
morado	<i>purple</i>	heliotropio	<i>heliotrope</i>
rosa	<i>pink</i>	cielo	<i>sky</i>
carmelita	<i>brown</i>	aceitunado	<i>olive</i>
chocolate		verde-oliva	<i>olive-green</i>
café	<i>coffee</i>	(rojo) claro, etc.	<i>light (red, etc.)</i>

VERBS.

All Spanish verbs end in **ar**, **er**, or **ir**, called respectively the 1st, 2nd, and 3rd conjugations. In actual use, however, there are only two conjugations, because with the exception of two persons in the present indicative, the 3rd conjugation is like the second in all tenses.

The verb infinitive has two parts, that is the stem and the termination (**ar**, **er**, **ir**), and in verbs regular the stem must appear intact in all persons and tenses.

To be irregular means that the stem is altered in some manner, although the terminations are almost always the same as the regular verbs.

Excepting only six verbs (**ser**, **estar**, **haber**, **dar**, **ir**, **saber**), the

1st person present indicative ends in **o**, whether the verb be regular or irregular.

This tense (present indicative) is formed from the infinitive, which gives the 1st person by changing the **ar** into **o**, e.g. :—

comprar, *to buy* compro, *I buy*

In the other persons of the tense the **a** appears, which is characteristic of the termination of the infinitive. With the exception only of the past definite and the imperative, the 2nd person singular always ends in **s**, the 3rd person singular ends with the vowel without any addition, and the three persons plural end always in **mos, is, n.**

From the 1st person present indicative (excepting the six verbs mentioned above), the subjunctive present is formed, changing the **o** into **e** in the 1st conjugation, which vowel is seen in each person.

The imperative is like the subjunctive present, except the 2nd persons, but it is requisite to put **que** before the 3rd persons singular and plural.

The 2nd person singular imperative is with a few exceptions like the 3rd person singular of the present indicative. The 2nd person plural imperative is without exception the infinitive with **d** instead of **r**. Example :—

Rule 1.—1st conjugation :—

comprar, *to buy* comprando, *buying* comprado, *bought*

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

compr o	<i>I buy, etc.</i>
compr as	
compr a	
compr amos	
compr áis	
compr an	

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

que compre	<i>that I buy, etc.</i>
que compres	
que compre	
que compremos	
que compréis	
que compren	

IMPERATIVE.

compra tú,	<i>buy thou</i>
compre V.	<i>buy (you)</i>
que compre él, ella	<i>let him (her) buy</i>
compremos	<i>let us buy</i>
comprad	<i>buy ye</i>
compren Vds.	<i>buy (you) (pl.)</i>
que compren ellos, ellas	<i>let them buy</i>

Rule 2.—Imperfect indicative : change the **ar** of the infinitive to **aba**, which appears in all the persons, adding the terminations as in the present indicative, e.g. :—

compraba		<i>I was buying I used to buy, etc.</i>
compraba s		
compraba		
comprába mos		
compraba is		
compraba n		

There are only three verbs in the Spanish which have the imperfect indicative irregular, viz. **ser**, **ir**, **ver**.

Rule 2.—Past definite (preterite) : change the **ar** of the infinitive to **é**. The other persons must be learned by heart, being different to the other tenses. This tense gives always the imperfect subjunctive (of which there are two forms); also the future subjunctive, which, however, is not used in conversation. The subjunctive tenses are formed from the 3rd person plural of the past definite, changing the **ron** into **se** or **ra**. Example :—

PAST DEFINITE.

SUBJUNCTIVE IMPERFECT.

compré	<i>I bought, etc.</i>	si comprase, ara
compraste		que comprases, aras
compró		comprase, ara
compramos		comprásemos, áramos
comprasteis		compraseis, arais
compraron		comprasen, aran

Rule 4.—The future indicative is formed by adding to the infinitive the terminations of **haber**, present indicative, **é**, **ás**, **á**, **emos**, **éis**, **án**, and the conditional is formed similarly from the imperfect indicative of **haber**. Example :—

comprar é	<i>I will buy, etc.</i>	compraría
comprar ás		compraría s
comprar á		compraría
comprar emos		compraría mos
compraréis		compraría is
comprar án		compraría n

Rule 1.—2nd and 3rd conjugations :—

Form like the 1st conjugation but with change of vowel in the terminations, as :—

aprender (*to learn*)

escribir (*to write*)

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

<i>I learn</i>	<i>I write</i>
aprend o	escrib o
aprend es	escrib es
aprend e	escrib e
aprend emos	escrib imos
aprend éis	escrib is
aprend en	escrib en

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

<i>that I learn</i>	<i>that I write</i>
aprend a	escrib a
aprend as	escrib as
aprend a	escrib a
aprend amos	escrib amos
aprend áis	escrib áis
aprend an	escrib an

IMPERATIVE.

aprende tú	escribe tú
aprenda V.	escriba V.
que aprenda él, ella	que escriba él, ella
aprendamos	escribamos
aprended	escribid
aprendan Vds.	escriban Vds.
que apredan ellos, ellas	que escriban ellos, ellas.

Rule 2 :—

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

<i>I used to learn</i>	<i>I used to write</i>
<i>I was learning</i>	<i>I was writing</i>
aprend ía	escrib ía
aprend ías	escrib ías
aprend ía	escrib ía
aprend íamos	escrib íamos
aprend íais	escrib íais
aprend ían	escrib ían

Rule 3 :—

PAST DEFINITE.

<i>I learned</i>	<i>I wrote</i>
aprend í	escrib í
aprend iste	escrib iste
aprend ió	escrib ió
aprend imos	escrib imos
aprend isteis	escrib isteis
aprend ieron	escrib ieron

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

<i>If I learned</i>	<i>If I wrote</i>
<i>that I might learn</i>	<i>that I might write</i>
aprend iese	escrib iese
aprend ieses	escrib ieses
aprend iese	escrib iese
aprend iésemos	escrib iésemos
aprend ieseis	escrib ieseis
aprend iesen	escrib iesen

In the imperfect subjunctive the termination may be **iéra, ieras, iera, iéramos, ierais, ieran.**

Rule 4 :—

FUTURE INDICATIVE.

CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE.

<i>I shall learn</i>	<i>I shall write</i>	<i>I should learn</i>	<i>I should write</i>
aprender é	escribir é	aprender ía	escribir ía
aprender ás	escribir ás	aprender ías	escribir ías
aprender á	escribir á	aprender ía	escribir ía
aprender emos	escribir emos	aprender íamos	escribir íamos
aprender éis	escribir éis	aprender íais	escribir íais
aprender án	escribir án	aprender ían	escribir ían

As Spanish is always phonetic it is requisite in some cases to make slight changes in the spelling of verbs so that they may agree with the primitive sound. This happens whenever there is the hard or soft sounds of **c**, **g**, or **k** (**qu**).

This is not to be considered an irregularity but simply a matter of writing phonetically the sounds one would speak naturally when not thinking of the spelling.

Notice therefore the following orthographical changes necessary on account of sound :—

Examples.

1. Verbs ending in <i>car</i> change <i>c</i> to <i>qu</i> before <i>e</i> .	<i>Tocar.</i>
2. " " " <i>cer, cir</i> change <i>c</i> to <i>z</i> before <i>a</i> and <i>o</i> . {	<i>Vencer.</i>
3. " " " <i>ger, gir</i> change <i>g</i> to <i>j</i> before <i>a</i> and <i>o</i> .	<i>Esparcir.</i>
4. " " " <i>quir</i> change <i>qu</i> to <i>c</i> before <i>a</i> and <i>o</i> .	<i>Escoger, corregir.</i>
5. " " " <i>guir</i> drop the <i>u</i> before <i>a</i> and <i>o</i> .	<i>Delinuir.</i>
6. " " " <i>gar</i> change to <i>gu</i> before <i>e</i> .	<i>Distinguir.</i>
7. " " " <i>zar</i> change <i>z</i> to <i>c</i> before <i>e</i> .	<i>Pagar.</i>
	<i>Gozar.</i>

Examples :—

<i>Tocar</i>	<i>que toque</i>	<i>that I touch</i>	<i>toqué</i>	<i>I touched</i>
<i>Vencer</i>	<i>venzo</i>	<i>I conquer</i>	<i>que venza</i>	<i>that I conquer</i>
<i>Esparcir</i>	<i>esparzo</i>	<i>I spread</i>	<i>que esparza</i>	<i>that I spread</i>
<i>Escoger</i>	<i>escojo</i>	<i>I choose</i>	<i>que escoja</i>	<i>that I choose</i>
<i>Corregir</i>	<i>corrijo</i>	<i>I correct</i>	<i>que corrija</i>	<i>that I correct</i>
<i>Delinuir</i>	<i>delinco</i>	<i>I transgress</i>	<i>que delinca</i>	<i>that I transgress</i>
<i>Pagar</i>	<i>que pague</i>	<i>that I pay</i>	<i>pagué</i>	<i>I paid</i>
<i>Gozar</i>	<i>que goce</i>	<i>that I enjoy</i>	<i>gocé</i>	<i>I enjoyed</i>

Full conjugation **estar, ser, tener, and haber :**

1. **Estar, to be** (temporary).

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

estoy	I am thou art, etc.
estás	
está	
estamos	
estáis	
están	

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

que esté	that I be, etc.
que estés	
que esté	
que estemos	
que estéis	
que estén	

IMPERATIVE.

está tú	be thou
esté V.	be (you)
que esté él, ella	that he, she be
estemos	that we be
estad	be ye
estén Vds.	be (you) (pl.)
que estén ellos, ellas	that they be

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE *regular*; estaba, estabas, etc.

PAST DEFINITE.

estuve	I was thou wast, etc.
estuviste	
estuvo	
estuvimos	
estuvisteis	
estuvieron	

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

que } estuviera, se	that I might be if I were, etc.
si }	
si estuvieras, ses	
si estuviera, se	
si estuvíramos, semos	
si estuvierais, seis	

FUTURE INDICATIVE.

estar é	I shall be, etc.
estar ás	
estar á	
estar emos	
estar éis	
estar án	

CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE.

estar ía	I should be, etc.
estar ías	
estar ía	
estar íamos	
estar íais	
estar ían	

2. **Ser, to be** (absolute or inherent) :—

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

soy	I am, etc.
eres	
es	
somos	
sois	
son	

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

que sea	that I be, etc.
que seas	
que sea	
que seamos	
que seáis	
que sean	

IMPERATIVE.

sé tú	<i>be thou</i>
sea V.	<i>be (you)</i>
que sea él, ella	<i>that he, she, be</i>
seamos	<i>let us be</i>
sed	<i>be ye</i>
sean Vds.	<i>be (you, pl.)</i>
que sean ellos, ellas	<i>that they be</i>

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

era	}	<i>I was, used to be, etc.</i>
eras		
era		
éramos		
érais		

PAST DEFINITE INDICATIVE.

fuí	}	<i>I was, etc.</i>
fuiste		
fué		
fuimos		
fuisteis		

que, si, fuese, fuera	}	<i>that I might be,</i>
fuese		
fuese		
fuésemos		
fueseis		

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

fuesen	}	<i>if I were, etc.</i>
fuese		
fuese		
fuésemos		
fueseis		

FUTURE INDICATIVE.

seré	}	<i>I shall be, etc.</i>
serás		
será		
seremos		
seréis		

CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE.

sería	}	<i>I should be, etc.</i>
serías		
sería		
seríamos		
seríais		

3. Tener, Haber, to have.

PRESENT INDICATIVE, *I have.*

tengo	he
tienes	has
tiene	ha
tenemos	hemos
tenéis	habéis
tienen	han

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE, *that I have.*

tenga	haya
tengas	hayas
tenga	haya
tengamos	hayamos
tengáis	hayáis
tengan	hayan

IMPERATIVE.

ten tú	<i>have thou</i>
tenga V.	<i>have (you)</i>
que tenga él, ella	<i>let him, her, have</i>
tengamos	<i>let us have</i>
tened	<i>have ye</i>
tengan Vds.	<i>have (you, pl.)</i>
que tengan ellos, ellas	<i>let them have</i>

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

I had, used to have, etc.

tenía	había
tenías	habías
tenía	había
teníamos	habíamos
teníais	habíais
tenían	habían

PAST DEFINITE.

I had, did have, etc.

tuve	hube
tuviste	hubiste
tuvo	hubo
tuvimos	hubimos
tuvisteis	hubisteis
tuvieron	hubieron

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE—*That I might have, if I had, etc.*

tuviese	tuviera
tuvieses	tuvieras
tuviese	tuviera
tuviésemos	tuviéramos
tuvieseis	tuvierais
tuviesen	tuvieran

hubiese	hubiera
hubieses	hubieras
hubiese	hubiera
hubiésemos	hubiéramos
hubieseis	hubierais
hubiesen	hubieran

FUTURE INDICATIVE.

I shall have, etc.

tendré	habré
tendrás	habrás
tendrá	habrá
tendremos	habremos
tendréis	habréis
tendrán	habrán

CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE.

I should have, etc.

tendría	habría
tendrías	habrías
tendría	habría
tendríamos	habríamos
tendrías	habrías
tendrian	habrían

IRREGULAR VERBS.

In the following we give only the irregular tenses. The other tenses are like **comprar**, **aprender**, **escribir**, given as models of the regular verbs.

N.B.—There are only three verbs having irregularities in the imperfect indicative: **ser**, **ver**, **ir**, and there are only twelve with irregular future indicative, viz. **caber**, **decir**, **hacer**, **poder**, **poner**, **querer**, **saber**, **valer**, **venir**, **tener**, **haber**, **salir**.

The first irregularity to notice is that in some verbs the letter **i** is added before the **e** of the stem, or if there is more than one **e** it is put before the last of them, in the three persons singular and the 3rd person plural. The 1st and 2nd persons plural are regular. The irregularity occurs only in Rule 1. Example:—

4. *Empezar, to begin.*

PRESENT INDICATIVE.	PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERATIVE.
empiezo	empiece	—
empiezas	empieces	empieza tú
empieza	empiece	{ empiece V. que empiece él, ella
empezamos	empecemos	empecemos
empezáis	empecéis	empezad
empiezan	empiecen	empiecen Vs. que empiecen

Notice that in all words z is changed to c before the letter e.

List of verbs most commonly used having this irregularity :—

1ST CONJUGATION.

acrecer	<i>to increase</i>	helar	<i>to freeze</i>
alentar	<i>to encourage</i>	manifestar	<i>to manifest</i>
apretar	<i>to squeeze</i>	negar	<i>to deny</i>
asentar	<i>to place</i>	nevar	<i>to snow</i>
atravesar	<i>to cross</i>	pensar	<i>to think</i>
calentar	<i>to warm</i>	plegar	<i>to fold</i>
cerrar	<i>to close</i>	quebrar	<i>to break</i>
comenzar	<i>to commence</i>	recomendar	<i>to recommend</i>
confesar	<i>to confess</i>	sembrar	<i>to sow</i>
despertar	<i>to waken</i>	sentarse	<i>to sit down</i>
errar	<i>to err</i>	temblar	<i>to tremble</i>
gobernar	<i>to govern</i>	tropezar	<i>to stumble</i>

Errar in the present indicative is written :—

yerro	erramos
yerras	erráis
yerra	yerran

2ND AND 3RD CONJUGATION.

ascender	<i>to ascend</i>	consentir	<i>to consent</i>
atender	<i>to attend</i>	convertir	<i>to convert</i>
contender	<i>to contend</i>	herir	<i>to wound</i>
defender	<i>to defend</i>	invertir	<i>to invert</i>
encender	<i>to light</i>	preferir	<i>to prefer</i>
entender	<i>to understand</i>	referir	<i>to refer</i>
perder	<i>to loose</i>	sentir	<i>to feel</i>
verter	<i>to spill, shed</i>	sentirlo	<i>to be sorry</i>
advertir	<i>to warn</i>		

The 3rd conjugation has an additional irregularity in the present participle, the *e* being changed to *i*, as : **advirtiendo**, **sintiendo**, etc. Such irregularity always affects the past definite, 3rd persons, from which the subjunctive imperfect is formed, viz. :—

Past definite, Sentir.

sentí	sentimos
sentiste	sentisteis
sintió	sintieron

Sentir before an infinitive means *to be sorry*.

5. **Adquirir** (*to acquire*) is conjugated as above, viz. **adquiero**, etc., but has the past definite regular.

6. **Querer** (*to will*) is as above, but has additional irregularities, viz. :—

PRESENT INDICATIVE.	PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERATIVE.
quiero	quiera	—
quieres	quieras	quiere tú
quiere	quiera	{ quiera V. que quiera él, ella
queremos	queramos	queramos
queréis	queráis	quered
quieren	quieran	{ quieran Vs. que quieran ellos, ellas

PAST DEFINITE. **IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.**

quise	quisiera, se
quisiste	quisieras, ses
quiso	quisiera, se
quisimos	quisiéramos, semos
quisisteis	quisierais, seis
quisieron	quisieran, sen

FUTURE INDICATIVE. **CONDITIONAL.**

querré	querría
querrás	querrías
querrá	querría
querremos	querríamos
querréis	querríais
querrán	querrían

7. The 2nd class changes the **o** of the root to **ue** in the same persons and tenses as class 1. Example :—

Encontrar, to meet :—

PRESENT INDICATIVE.	PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERATIVE.
encuentro	encuentre	—
encuentras	encuentres	encuentra tú
encuentra	encuentre	encuentre V. que encuentre él, ella
encontramos	encontremos	encontremos
encontráis	encontréis	encontrad
encuentran	encuentren	encuentren Vds. que encuentren ellos, ellas

List of verbs most used of this same irregularity :—

1ST CONJUGATION.

acordarse	<i>to remember</i>	jugar	<i>to play</i>
acostarse	<i>to go to bed</i>	mostrar	<i>to show</i>
almorzar	<i>to lunch</i>	probar	<i>to prove</i>
aprobar	<i>to approve</i>	recordar	<i>to remind</i>
consolar	<i>to console</i>	rogar	<i>to entreat</i>
costar	<i>to cost</i>	volar	<i>to fly</i>
forzar	<i>to force</i>		

Jugar, having already the letter **u**, requires only to have added the latter **e**, as **juego**.

2ND CONJUGATION.

absolver	<i>to absolve</i>	mover	<i>to move</i>
devolver	<i>to give back</i>	oler	<i>to smell</i>
doler	<i>to pain</i>	resolver	<i>to resolve</i>
llover	<i>to rain</i>	soler	<i>to be wont</i>

Verbs ending in **olver** have also the past participle irregular, **uelto** instead of **ido**, viz. **absuelto**, etc.

8. **Oler** takes **h** before **ue**.

9. **Poder** (*to can, may, be able*) is like the above, but has also other irregularities as follow :—

PAST DEFINITE.	IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.	FUTURE INDICATIVE.	CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE.
pude	pudiese, ra	podré	podría
pudiste	pudieses, ras	podrás	podrías
pudo	pudiese, ra	podrá	podría
pudimos	pudiésemos, ramos	podremos	podríamos
pudisteis	pudieseis, rais	podréis	podrásis
pudieron	pudiesen, ran	podrán	podrían
Present Participle, pudiendo.			

10. **Dormir** is like the second class (No. 7), but has two other irregularities, viz. the present participle *durmiendo*, the past definite in the 3rd persons *only*, and the imperfect subjunctive *throughout*, as :—

PAST DEFINITE.	IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.
----------------	------------------------

dormí	durmiese	durmiera
dormiste	durmieses	durmieras
durmió	durmiese	durmiera
dormimos	durmíesemos	durmíeramos
dormisteis	durmieseis	durmierais
durmieron	durmiesen	durmieran

11. **Morir** is as *dormir*, but has also the irregular past participle **muerto**.

Note that whenever the present participle is irregular the same irregularity must occur in the 3rd persons of the past definite.

12. **Andar** (*to go, to walk*) is in the terminations of the past definite like **tener**, as :—

PRESENT INDICATIVE.	IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.
---------------------	------------------------

anduve	anduviese	anduviera
anduviste	anduvieses	anduvieras
anduvo	anduviese	anduviera
anduvimos	anduviésemos	anduvíeramos
anduvisteis	anduvieseis	anduvierais
anduvieron	anduviesen	anduvieran

13. **Caber**, *to hold, to be contained, to be able to be contained*.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.	PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERATIVE.
quepo	quepa	—
cabes	quepas	cabe
cabe	quepa	{ quepa V. que quepa él, ella
cabemos	quepamos	quepamos
cabéis	quepáis	cabed
caben	quepan	{ quepan Vds. que quepan ellos, ellas

N.B.—Verbs having only the 1st person of the indicative irregular have the same irregularity in *all* the persons of the present subjunctive.

PAST DEFINITE.	IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.
cupe	cupiese
cupiste	cupieses
cupo	cupiese
cupimos	cupiésemos
cupisteis	cupieseis
cupieron	cupiesen

FUTURE INDICATIVE.	CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE.
cabré	cabría
cabrás	cabrías
cabrá	cabría
cabremos	cabríamos
cabréis	cabrías
cabrán	cabrían

14. Caer, to fall; cayendo, falling.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.	PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERATIVE.
(See note at No. 13.)		
caigo	caiga	—
caes	caigas	cae tú
cae	caiga	{ caiga V. que caiga él, ella
caemos	caigamos	caigamos
caéis	caigáis	caed
caen	caigan	{ caigan Vds. que caigan ellos, ellas

Notice that **i** between vowels (past definite) changes naturally to **y**, which occurs therefore in the imperfect subjunctive, e.g. :—

caí, caiste **cayó**, caímos, caisteis, cayeron

15. **Conducir**, *to conduct*, and verbs ending in **ucir**.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.	PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERATIVE.
(See note at No. 13.)		
conduzco	conduzca	—
conduces	conduzcas	conduce
conduce	conduzca	{ que conduzca
conducimos	conduzcamos	conduzcamos
conducís	conduzcaís	conducid
conducen	conduzcan	{ que conduzcan Vds.

PAST DEFINITE. IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

conduje	condujera, se
condujiste	condujeras, ses
condujo	condujera, se
condujimos	condujéramos, semos
condujisteis	condujerais, seis
condujeron	condujeran, sen

16. **Conocer** (*to know, to be acquainted with*), and verbs ending in **ecer, ocer** :—

PRESENT INDICATIVE.	PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERATIVE.
(See Note at No. 13.)		
conozco	conozca	—
conoces	conozcas	conoce
conoce	conozca	{ que conduzca V.
conocemos	conozcamos	conozcamos
conocéis	conozcaís	conoced
conocen	conozcan	{ que conozcan Vs.

17. **Dar**, *to give*.

In the present indicative the 1st person, instead of being **do**, is **doy**.

The subjunctive present is regular : **dé, des, dé, etc.**

PAST DEFINITE.

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

dí	diese	diera
diste	dieses	dieras
dió	diese	diera
dimos	diésemos	diéramos
disteis	dieseis	dierais
dieron	diesen	dieran

18. *Decir, to tell, to say.*

8 PRESENT INDICATIVE.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

IMPERATIVE.

(See Note at No. 13).

digo	diga	—
dices	digas	dice tú
dice	diga	{ diga V. que diga él, ella
decimos	digamos	digamos
decís	digáis	decid
dicen	digan	{ digan Vds. que digan ellos, ellas

PAST DEFINITE.

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

dije	dijese	}	dijera
dijiste	dijeses		dijeras
dijo	dijese		dijera
dijimos	diésemos		diéramos
dijisteis	dijeseis		dijerais
dijeron	dijesen		dijeran

FUTURE INDICATIVE. CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE.

diré	diría
dirás	dirías
dirá	diría
diremos	diríamos
diréis	diríais
dirán	dirían

19. *Bendecir* is like *decir*, except the future and conditional indicative, which are regular.

20. *Erguir, to erect; irguiendo, erecting.*

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

yergo or irgo
yergues irgues, etc.
yergue
erguimos
erguis
yerguen

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

yerga
yergas
yerga
irgamos
irgáis
yergan

IMPERATIVE.

—
yergue tú
yerga V.
que yerga él, ella
irgamos
erguid
yergan Vds.
que yergan ellos, ellas

PAST DEFINITE.

ergui
erguiste
irguió
erguimos
erguisteis
irguieron

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

irguiese
irguieses
irguiese
irguísemos
irguiseis
irguiesen

or

irguiera
irguieras
irguiera
irguíramos
irguieraís
irguieran

21. *Hacer, to make, to do.*

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

IMPERATIVE.

(See Note at No. 13).

hago
haces
hace
hacemos
hacéis
hacen

haga
hagas
haga
hagamos
hagáis
hagan

—
haz tú
haga V.
que haga él, ella
hagamos
haced
hagan Vds.
que hagan ellos, ellas

PAST DEFINITE.

hice
hiciste
hizo
hicimos
hicisteis
hicieron

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

hiciese
hicieses
hiciese
hiciésemos
hicieseis
hiciesen

or

hiciera
hicieras
hiciera
hiciéramos
hicieraís
hicieran

FUTURE INDICATIVE. CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE.

haré	haría
harás	harías
hará	haría
haremos	haríamos
haréis	haríais
harán	harían

22. *Instruir*, to instruct, and all verbs ending in *uir* where the *u* is pronounced :—

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

IMPERATIVE.

instruyo	instruya	—
instruyes	instruyas	instruye tú
instruye	instruya	instruya V.
instruimos	instruyamos	{ que instruya él, ella
instruís	instruyáis	instruyamos
instruyen	instruyan	{ instruyan Vds. que instruyan ellos, ellas

Note observation at No. 14 regarding past definite.

23. *Ir*, to go.PRESENT
INDICATIVE.PRESENT
SUBJUNCTIVE.

IMPERATIVE.

voy	vaya	—
vas	vayas	ve tú
va	vaya	{ vaya V. que vaya él, ella
vamos	vayamos	vayamos
vais	vayáis	id
van	vayan	{ vayan Vds. que vayan ellos, ellas

Imperfect Indicative *iba*, *ibas*, *iba*, *ibamos*, *ibais*, *iban*.

PAST DEFINITE.

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

fui	fuese	or	fueras
fuiste	fueses		fueras
fué	fuese		fueras
fuimos	fuésemos		fuéramos
fuisteis	fueseis		fuerais
fueron	fuesen		fueran

24. *Oir, to hear.*

PRESENT INDICATIVE.	PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERATIVE.
oigo	oiga	—
oyes	oigas	oye tú
oye	oiga	{ oiga V. que oiga él, ella
oimos	oigamos	oigamos
ois	oigáis	oid
oyen	oigan	{ oigan Vds. que oigan ellos, ellas

Notice that *i* between vowels is changed to *y*. See also note at No. 14 re past definite and imperfect subjunctive.

25. *Pedir, to ask (for); pidiendo, asking.*

PRESENT INDICATIVE.	PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERATIVE.
pido	pida	—
pides	pidas	pide tú
pide	pida	{ pida V. que pida él, ella
pedimos	pidamos	pidamos
pedis	pidáis	pedid
piden	pidan	{ pidan Vds. que pidan ellos, ellas

PAST DEFINITE.	IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.		
pedí	pidiése		pidiera
pediste	pidiéses		pidieras
pidió	pidiése		pidiera
pedimos	pidiésemos		pidiéramos
pedisteis	pidiéseis		pidierais
pidieron	pidiesen		pidieran

or

The following are the commonest verbs conjugated like *pedir* :—

competir	<i>to compete</i>	perseguir	<i>to persecute</i>
concebir	<i>to conceive</i>	reirse de	<i>to laugh at</i>
conseguir	<i>to obtain, to get</i>	reñir	<i>to quarrel</i>
corregir	<i>to correct</i>	repetir	<i>to repeat</i>
elegir	<i>to elect, select</i>	seguir	<i>to follow</i>
expedir	<i>to despatch</i>	servir	<i>to serve</i>
investir	<i>to invest</i>	tenir	<i>to dye</i>
medir	<i>to measure</i>	vestir	<i>to clothe</i>

26. *Poner, to put.*

PRESENT INDICATIVE.	PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERATIVE.
------------------------	-------------------------	-------------

(See note at No. 13.)

pongo	ponga	—
pones	pongás	pon tú
pone	ponga	{ ponga V. que ponga él, ella
ponemos	pongamos	pongamos
ponéis	pongáis	poned
ponen	pongan	{ pongan Vds. que pongan ellos, ellas

PAST DEFINITE.

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

puse	pusiese	or {	pusiera
pusiste	pusieses		pusieras
puso	pusiese		pusiera
pusimos	pusiésemos		pusiéramos
pusisteis	pusieseis		pusierais
pusieron	pusiesen		pusieran

FUTURE INDICATIVE.

CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE.

pondré	pondría
pondrás	pondrías
pondrá	pondría
pondremos	pondríamos
pondréis	pondréis
pondrán	pondrían

27. *Saber, to know (how); terminations like caber (No. 13), except 1st person of the present indicative :—*

PRESENT INDICATIVE.	PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERATIVE.
------------------------	-------------------------	-------------

sé	sepa	—
sabes	sepas	sabe tú
sabe	sepa	{ sepa V. que sepa él, ella
sabemos	sepamos	sepamos
sabéis	sepáis	sabed
saben	sepan	{ sepan Vds. que sepan ellos, ellas

PAST DEFINITE.

supe
supiste
supo
supimos
supisteis
supieron

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

supiese, ra
supieses
supiese
supiésemos
supieseis
supiesen

FUTURE INDICATIVE.

sabré
sabrás
sabrá
sabremos
sabréis
sabrán

CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE.

sabría
sabrías
sabría
sabríamos
sabríais
sabrían

28. *Salir, to start, to go out.*

PRESENT INDICATIVE.	PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERATIVE.
(See note at No. 13.)		
salgo	salga	—
sales	salgas	sal tú
sale	salga	{ salga V. que salga él, ella
salimos	salgamos	salgamos
salís	salgáis	salid
salen	salgan	{ salgan Vds. que salgan ellos, ellas

FUTURE INDICATIVE.

saldré
saldrás
saldrá
saldremos
saldréis
saldrán

CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE.

saldría
saldrías
saldría
saldríamos
saldríais
saldrían

29. *Valer (to be worth)* is like *salir*, except 1st and 2nd persons plural of present indicative, which being regular, are *valemos*, *valéis*.

30. *Traer, to bring.*

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

IMPERATIVE.

(See Note at No. 13).

traigo	traiga	—
traes	traigas	trae tú
trae	traiga	{ que traiga V. traiga él, ella
traemos	traigamos	
traéis	traigáis	traigamos
traen	traigan	{ traigan Vds. que traigan ellos, ellas

PAST DEFINITE.

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

traje	trajese	or	trajera
trajiste	trajeses		trajeras
trajo	trajese		trajera
trajimos	trajésemos		trajéramos
trajisteis	trajeseis		trajerais
trajeron	trajesen		trajeran

31. *Venir, to come; vieniendo, coming.*

This verb has the same terminations as **tener**, except in the past definite, the present participle, and two persons of the present indicative.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

vengo, vienes, viene	venimos, venís, vienen
----------------------	------------------------

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

venga, vengas, venga	vengamos, vengáis, vengan
----------------------	---------------------------

IMPERATIVE.

— ven, { que venga él, ella, venga V. }	vengamos, venid { que vengan ellos, ellas vengan Vs. }
--	---

PAST DEFINITE.

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

vine	viniese	or	viniera
viniste	vinieses		vinieras
vino	viniese		viniera
vinimos	viñiésemos		viñéramos
vinisteis	vinieseis		vinierais
vinieron	viniesen		vinieran

FUTURE INDICATIVE. CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE.

vendré	vendría
vendrás	vendrías
vendrá	vendría
vendremos	vendríamos
vendréis	vendríais
vendrán	vendrían

32. *Ver, to see.*

PRESENT INDICATIVE. PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE. IMPERATIVE.

(See Note at No. 13).

veo	vea	—
ves	veas	ve tú
ve	vea	{ vea V. que vea él, ella
vemos	veamos	
veis	veais	veamos ved
ven	vean	{ vean Vds. que vean ellos, ellas

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

veía	veíamos
veías	vefáis
veía	veían

The following verbs have irregular past participles :—

		abierto	muerto (matado)
abrir	matar	cubierto	muerto
cubrir	morir	dicho	puesto
decir	poner	escrito	roto (rompido)
escribir	romper	frito	visto
freír	ver	hecho	
hacer			

Verbs ending in *olver* have the past participle irregularly *uelto*, as **absolver, absuelto.**See other irregular past participles, *adjectives* (Lesson 63).

LIST OF THE PRINCIPAL IRREGULAR VERBS.

The number after each verb refers to the model like which it is conjugated :—

absolver	<i>to absolve</i>	8	balbucir	{ <i>to stammer</i> }	15
abstenerse	<i>to abstain</i>	3		<i>to mutter</i>	
acaecer	<i>to happen</i>	16	bendecir	<i>to bless</i>	19
acertar	{ <i>to hit the mark</i> } { <i>to do opportunely</i> } ⁴				
acordarse	<i>to remember</i>	7	caber	{ <i>to hold, to be able</i> } { <i>to be contained</i> } ¹³	
acostarse	<i>to lie down</i>	7	caer	<i>to fall</i>	14
acrecentar	<i>to increase</i>	4	calentar	<i>to warm</i>	4
adherir	<i>to adhere</i>	5	cegar	<i>to blind</i>	4
adquirir	<i>to acquire</i>	5	cerrar	<i>to shut</i>	4
aducir	<i>to adduce</i>	15	cocer	<i>to boil</i>	7
advertir	{ <i>to take notice</i> } { <i>to warn</i> }	4	colgar	<i>to hang up</i>	7
agradecer	<i>to thank</i>	16	comenzar	<i>to commence</i>	4
alentar	<i>to encourage</i>	4	compadecer	<i>to pity</i>	16
almorzar	<i>to lunch</i>	7	competir	<i>to compete</i>	25
amanecer	<i>to dawn</i>	16	complacer	<i>to please anyone</i>	16
amolar	<i>to sharpen</i>	7	componer	<i>to compose</i>	26
andar	<i>to walk, to go</i>	12	comprobar	<i>to verify</i>	7
anocheecer	<i>to grow dark</i>	16	concebir	<i>to conceive</i>	25
apostar	<i>to bet</i>	7	concluir	<i>to conclude</i>	22
apretar	{ <i>to compress</i> } { <i>to squeeze</i> }	4	concordar	<i>to concord, to agree</i>	7
aprobar	<i>to approve</i>	7	condescender	<i>to condescend</i>	4
argüir	<i>to argue</i>	22	conducir	<i>to conduct</i>	15
arrendar	<i>to rent, hire</i>	4	conferir	<i>to confer</i>	4
arrepentirse	<i>to repent</i>	5	confesar	<i>to confess</i>	4
ascender	<i>to ascend</i>	4	commover	<i>to move, affect</i>	7
asentar	{ <i>to place</i> } { <i>to set down</i> }	4	conocer	<i>to know</i>	16
asentir	<i>to assent</i>	5	conseguir	<i>to get, attain</i>	25
aserrar	<i>to saw</i>	4	consentir	<i>to consent</i>	5
atender	<i>to attend</i>	4	consolar	<i>to console</i>	7
atenerse	<i>to go by, to abide</i>	3	constituir	<i>to constitute</i>	22
aterrar	<i>to terrify</i>	4	construir	<i>to construct</i>	22
atestar	<i>to cram</i>	4	contar	<i>to relate, count</i>	7
atraer	<i>to attract</i>	30	contender	<i>to contend</i>	4
atravesar	<i>to cross</i>	4	contener	<i>to contain</i>	3
atribuir	<i>to attribute</i>	22	contradecir	<i>to contradict</i>	18
avergonzar	<i>to shame</i>	4	contraer	<i>to contract</i>	30
			contravenir	<i>to contravene</i>	31
			contribuir	<i>to contribute</i>	22
			convenir	<i>to suit</i>	31
			convertir	<i>to convert</i>	5

corregir	<i>to correct</i>	25	empezar	<i>to begin</i>	4
costar	<i>to cost</i>	7	encender	<i>to light</i>	4
crecer	<i>to grow</i>	16	encerrar	<i>to inclose</i>	4
			encomendar	<i>to commend</i>	4
dar	<i>to give</i>	17	encontrar	<i>to meet, find</i>	7
decaer	<i>to decay</i>	30	enmendar	<i>to correct, mend</i>	4
decir	<i>to tell, say</i>	18	entender	<i>to understand</i>	4
deducir	<i>to deduce</i>	15	entristerse	<i>to grieve</i>	16
defender	<i>to defend</i>	4	envolver	<i>to wrap up</i>	8
deferir	<i>to defer</i>	4	erguir	<i>to erect</i>	20
demostrar	<i>to demonstrate</i>	7	errar	<i>to err</i>	4
derretir	<i>to melt</i>	25	escarmentar	<i>to correct severely</i>	4
descender	<i>to descend</i>	4	esforzarse	<i>to make efforts</i>	7
descollar	<i>to unhang</i>	7	establecer	<i>to establish</i>	16
descomponer	<i>to discompose</i>	26	estar	<i>to be</i>	1
deshacer	<i>to undo</i>	21	estregar	<i>to scour</i>	4
deshelar	<i>to thaw</i>	4	excluir	<i>to exclude</i>	22
desobedecer	<i>to disobey</i>	16	expedir	<i>to despatch</i>	25
despedir	<i>to dismiss</i>	25	exponer	<i>to expose</i>	26
despedirse	<i>to take leave</i>	25	extender	<i>to extend</i>	4
despertar	<i>to awake</i>	4	extraer	<i>to extract</i>	30
desplegar	<i>to display</i>	4			
desterrar	<i>to banish</i>	4	favorecer	<i>to favour</i>	16
destruir	<i>to destroy</i>	22	forzar	<i>to force</i>	7
detener	<i>to detain</i>	3	fregar	<i>to scrub</i>	4
detractar	<i>to detract</i>	30			
devolver	<i>{ to give back, return, to reciprocate }</i>	8	gemir	<i>to groan</i>	25
			gobernar	<i>to govern</i>	4
digerir	<i>to digest</i>	5	haber	<i>to have</i>	3
disminuir	<i>to diminish</i>	22	hacer	<i>to do</i>	21
disolver	<i>to dissolve</i>	8	helar	<i>to freeze</i>	4
disponer	<i>to dispose</i>	26	henchir	<i>{ to puff out to fill up }</i>	25
distraer	<i>to distract</i>	30			
distribuir	<i>to distribute</i>	22	hender	<i>to cleave</i>	4
divertir	<i>to divert</i>	5	herir	<i>to wound</i>	5
divertirse	<i>to amuse</i>	5	herrar	<i>to shoe horses</i>	4
doler	<i>to pain</i>	7	hervir	<i>to boil</i>	5
dormir	<i>to sleep</i>	10	huir	<i>to escape</i>	22
elegir	<i>to select</i>	25	impedir	<i>to impede</i>	25
empedrar	<i>to pave</i>	4	imponer	<i>to impose</i>	26

incluir	<i>to include</i>	22	pensar	<i>to think</i>	4
inducir	<i>to induce</i>	15	perder	<i>to lose</i>	4
inferir	<i>to infer</i>	5	perseguir	<i>to persecute</i>	25
instruir	<i>to instruct</i>	22	pertenecer	<i>to belong</i>	16
intervenir	<i>to intervene</i>	31	pervertir	<i>to pervert</i>	5
introducir	<i>to introduce</i>	15	plegar	<i>to pleat, fold</i>	4
invernar	<i>to winter</i>	4	poder	<i>to be able</i>	9
invertir	<i>to invert</i>	5	poner	<i>to put</i>	26
ir	<i>to go</i>	23	preferir	<i>to prefer</i>	5
			probar	<i>to prove</i>	7
jugar	<i>to play</i>	7	producir	<i>to produce</i>	15
			proponer	<i>to propose</i>	26
llover	<i>to rain</i>	7			
lucir	<i>to shine</i>	16	quebrar	<i>to break</i>	4
			querer	<i>to will, want</i>	6
maldecir	<i>to curse</i>	18			
manifestar	{ <i>to manifest</i> <i>to lay before</i> }	4	recomendar	<i>to recommend</i>	4
			recordar	<i>to remind</i>	7
mantener	<i>to maintain</i>	3	recostar	{ <i>to go to rest</i> <i>to recline</i> }	7
medir	<i>to measure</i>	25			
mentir	<i>to lie</i>	5	reducir	<i>to reduce</i>	15
merecer	<i>to merit</i>	16	referir	<i>to refer</i>	5
merendar	<i>to lunch</i>	4	regar	<i>to water</i>	4
moler	<i>to grind</i>	7	regir	<i>to govern, to rule</i>	25
morder	<i>to bite</i>	7	reirse de	<i>to laugh at</i>	25
morir	<i>to die</i>	11	remendar	<i>to patch</i>	4
mostrar	<i>to show</i>	7	remover	<i>to remove</i>	7
mover	<i>to move</i>	7	renovar	<i>to renew</i>	7
			reñir	<i>to quarrel</i>	25
nacer	<i>to be born</i>	16	repetir	<i>to repeat</i>	25
negar	<i>to deny</i>	4	reprobar	<i>to reprove</i>	7
nevar	<i>to snow</i>	4	reproducir	<i>to reproduce</i>	15
			resolver	<i>to resolve</i>	8
obedecer	<i>to obey</i>	16	resonar	<i>to resound</i>	7
obtener	<i>to obtain</i>	3	restablecer	<i>to recover (health)</i>	16
oir	<i>to hear</i>	24	restituir	<i>to restore</i>	22
oler	<i>to smell</i>	7	reventar	<i>to burst</i>	4
oponer	<i>to oppose</i>	26	revolver	<i>to revolve</i>	8
			rodar	<i>to roll</i>	7
padecer	<i>to suffer</i>	16	rogar	<i>to pray</i>	7
parecer	<i>to seem</i>	16			
pedir	<i>to ask for</i>	25	saber	<i>to know (how)</i>	27

salir	<i>to go out</i>	28	temblar	<i>to tremble</i>	4
satisfacer	<i>to satisfy</i>	21	tener	<i>to have, to hold</i>	3
seguir	<i>to follow</i>	25	teñir	<i>to dye</i>	25
sembrar	<i>to sow</i>	4	traducir	<i>to translate</i>	15
sentar	<i>to place</i>	4	traer	<i>to bring</i>	30
sentarse	<i>to sit down</i>	4	trocar	<i>to exchange</i>	7
sentir	<i>to feel</i>	5	tronar	<i>to thunder</i>	7
ser	<i>to be</i>	2	tropezar	<i>to stumble</i>	4
servir	<i>to serve</i>	25			
sobrevenir	<i>to supervene</i>	31	valer	<i>to be worth</i>	29
soler	{ <i>to be wont</i> } { <i>to be accustomed</i> }	7	venir	<i>to come</i>	31
			ver	<i>to see</i>	32
soltar	<i>to loosen</i>	7	vestir	<i>to dress</i>	25
sonar	<i>to sound</i>	7	volar	<i>to fly</i>	7
soñar	<i>to dream</i>	7	volcar	<i>to overturn</i>	7
sostener	<i>to sustain</i>	3	volver	<i>to return</i>	8
sugerir	<i>to suggest</i>	5			
suponer	<i>to suppose</i>	26	zaherir	<i>to censure</i>	5
sustituir	<i>to substitute</i>	22			

VOCABULARY—SPANISH-ENGLISH.

(The numbers refer to the lessons. Verbs starred are irregular.)

A.

á, 4, at, to
 abandonar, 23, to abandon
 abanico (m.), 17, fan
 abatir, 21, to beat down
 aborrecer *, 52, to abhor
 abrir (abierto), 19, to open
 abuelo, 27, grandfather
 aburrirse, 18, to get weary
 acabar, 5, to finish
 acabar de, 16, to have just
 acaso, 25, by chance, perhaps
 accidente, 22, accident
 acción (f.), 23, action
 aceptar, 12, to accept
 acercarse á, 23, to approach, to go
 near
 aclarar, 16, to clear up
 acompañar, 9, to accompany
 acoger, 51, to take up (bills, etc.)
 aconsejar, 24, to advise
 acontecer *, 22, to happen
 acontecimiento (m.), 13, event
 acordarse de *, 30, to remember
 acostarse *, 21, to lie down
 acrecentar *, 29, to increase
 acreedor (m.), 50, creditor
 activar, 23, to push forward
 acto, 26, act
 actualmente, 13, at present
 acudir, 50, to repair to
 acumular, 44, to accumulate
 acusar, 23, to acknowledge (a letter)
 adelantar, 9, to advance
 admitir, 27, to admit
 advertir, 51, to warn
 adoptar, 27, to adopt
 afamado, 36, famed
 afecto, 41, affection

afligido, 25, afflicted
 afuera, 47, out of the house
 agasajar, 24, to receive and treat
 kindly, to look well after
 ageno, 44, belonging to another,
 strange
 agradable, 33, agreeable
 agradar, 27, to please
 agradecer *, 20, to thank
 agricultura (f.), 31, agriculture
 agua (f.), 5, water
 aguador (m.), 11, water carrier
 aguantar, 26, to endure
 aguar, 50, to water
 aguardar, 23, to wait
 agujón (m.), 26, prick, goad
 aguja (f.), 63, needle
 agudo, 42, sharp
 ahora, 11, now
 aire (m.), 16, air
 al (m.), 1, at the
 ala (f.), 50, wing
 alabar, 37, to praise
 albedrío, libre, 49, liberty
 alcoba (f.), 8, bedroom
 aldea (f.), 13, village
 alegrarse de, 21, to be glad
 alegre, 7, merry
 alentado, 44, encouraged
 alfiler (m.), 17, pin
 algo, 6, something
 algodón (m.), 23, cotton
 alguien, 13, somebody
 alguno, 3, some
 alimento, 26, food
 aliviar, 26, to relieve
 allí, 7, there
 allí, por, 20, that way
 alma (f.), 15, soul
 almacén, 13, warehouse

- almacenar, 24, *to warehouse*
 almohada (f.), 45, *pillow*
 almohadón (m.), 37, *large cushion*
 almorzar *, 12, *to breakfast, to lunch*
 almuerzo (m.), 6, *breakfast*
 alquilar, 36, *to hire, let*
 altivez (f.), 63, *arrogance*
 alto, 1, *high*
 amable, 18, *amiable*
 amar, 23, *to love*
 ambos, 59, *both*
 amenaza, 32, *threat*
 amigo, (m.), 7, *friend*
 amistad, (f.), 20, *friendship*
 amor (m.), 37, *love*
 ancho, 18, *broad*
 anciano, (m.), 14, *old man*
 andar, 31, 39, *to walk, go*
 andén, 15, *platform (railway)*
 angosto, 22, *narrow*
 animal (m.), 27, *animal*
 ánimo, 58, *soul, courage*
 anoche, 21, *last night*
 anteayer, 9, *day before yesterday*
 antecedentes (m.), 26, *antecedents, data*
 antes, 6, 18, 19, *before*
 antes, cuanto, 15, 24, *soon as possible*
 antes, lo antes posible, 22, *soon as possible*
 antiguo, 22, *ancient*
 antojar, 45, *to desire (without reflection)*
 anzuelo (m.), 32, *hook*
 año (m.), 19, *year*
 apagar, 9, *to put out*
 aparentar, 26, *to affect, simulate*
 apegar, 58, *to adhere*
 aplastado, 59, *crushed*
 aplicación (f.), 22, *diligence*
 aplicado, 3, *diligent*
 aposento (m.), 43, *apartment*
 apostar *, 41, *to bet*
 aprender, 10, *to learn*
 apretar *, 12, *to squeeze*
 aprobación (f.), 15, *approbation*
 aprovechar, 21, *to profit*
 apurar, 27, *to exhaust, urge*
 aquél, lla, 7, *that*
 aquí, 2, *here*
 armario (m.), 8, *cupboard*
 armario para libros, 8, *bookcase*
- arrabal (m.), 22, *suburb*
 arrancar, 52, *to pull up by the roots, to snatch*
 arrepentirse, 29, *to repent*
 arriesgarse, 42, *to risk, dare*
 arrojar, 23, *to throw*
 artículo (m.), 12, *article*
 asa (f.), 55, *handle*
 asco (m.), 43, *nausea*
 asegurar, 22, *to secure, insure*
 asentar *, 54, *to place*
 asesinar, 38, *to assassinate*
 asiento (m.), 21, *seat*
 asistir, 24, *to attend*
 asomar, 42, *to show, to approach*
 asunto (m.), 17, *affair*
 asustar, 37, *to frighten*
 atención (f.), 24, *attention*
 atentado (m.), 26, *attempt*
 atrasar, 9, *to retard*
 atravesar *, 29, *to cross*
 aunque, 28, *although*
 ausente, 24, *absent*
 aventura (f.), 28, *adventure*
 avergonzar *, 42, *to shame*
 averiado, 56, *damaged*
 avisar, 23, *to advise*
 ayer, 9, *yesterday*
 ayuda, 52, *help*
 ayudante (m.), 19, *helper*
 ayudar, 9, *to help*
 ayuntamiento (m.), 18, *corporation town hall*
 azotar, 49, *to beat, whip*
 azúcar, 4, *sugar*
 azul, 7, *blue*

B.

- bajar, 19, *to lower*
 balde, de, 27, *gratis*
 bañar, 44, *to bathe*
 banco (m.), 12, *bank*
 barato, 9, *cheap*
 bastante, 6, 13, *sufficient*
 bastar, 19, *to suffice*
 batr (f.), 37, *gown*
 batalla (f.), 54, *battle*
 baul (m.), 29, *trunk*
 beber, 14, *to drink*
 Bélgica, 19, *Belgium*

biblioteca (f.), 14, *library*
 bicicleta (f.), 35, *bicycle*
 bien, 2, *well*
 bien, más bien que, 18, *rather*
 bienhechor (m.), 27, *benefactor*
 billete (m.), 9, *ticket*
 blanco, 17, *white*
 boda (f.), 39, *wedding*
 bolsillo (m.), 3, *pocket*
 bondad (f.), 22, *goodness*
 borracho, 48, *drunk*
 bostezar, 52, *to yawn*
 bota (f.), 2, *boot*
 botella (f.), 58, *bottle*
 brazo (m.), 23, *arm*
 brocado (m.), 37, *brocade*
 bueno, 1, *good*
 buque (m.), 21, *ship*
 Burdeos, 27, *Bordeaux*
 burlarse, 23, *to jest*
 buscar, 6, *to seek*
 butaca (f.), 57, *armchair*
 buzón, 6, *letter box (in streets)*

C.

caballero (m.), 18, *gentleman*
 caballo (m.), 17, *horse*
 cabeza, dolor de, 19, *headache*
 caber *, 31, *to hold, contain, to be able to contain*
 cabo (m.), 47, *end, extremity*
 cada, 19, *each*
 caer *, 13, *to fall*
 caer, dejar, 22, *to let fall*
 café (m.), *coffee, coffee house*
 caja (f.), 5, 9, *case, box*
 cajón (m.), 22, *chest*
 cal (f.), 55, *lime*
 calcetines (m.), 8, *socks, small stockings*
 calidad (f.), 23, *quality*
 caliente, 32, *warm*
 callar, 23, *to be silent*
 calle (f.), 2, *street*
 cama (f.), 3, *bed*
 cambiar, 7, *to change*
 camino (m.), 24, *road*
 camisa (f.), 8, *shirt, chemise*
 camiseta (f.), 8, *undershirt*
 canasta (f.), 32, *basket*

cansar, 2, *to tire*
 cántaros, á, 25, *in bucketsful*
 caña (f.), 54, *reed*
 capa (f.), 58, *cloak*
 capaz, 35, *capable*
 carbón (m.), 2, *coal*
 carecer *, 47, *to lack*
 caritativo, 36, *charitable*
 carne (f.), 6, *flesh*
 caro, 8, *dear*
 carpintero (m.), 14, *carpenter*
 carrota (f.), 42, *mask*
 cartero (m.), 6, *postman*
 casa (f.), 2, *house*
 casa á, en, 11, 16, *home*
 casarse, 22, *to get married*
 casi, 21, *almost*
 caso, 15, *case*
 caso, hacer *, 23, *to take notice*
 castigar, 37, *to punish*
 catedral (f.), 19, *cathedral*
 causa (f.), 23, *cause*
 cebo (m.), 32, *bait*
 celebrar, 21, *to celebrate*
 célebre, 36, *celebrated*
 celo (m.), 37, *zeal*
 cenar, 22, *to sup*
 cerca de, 6, *near*
 cerdo (m.), 54, *hog, pig*
 cerebro (m.), 28, *brain*
 ceremonia (f.), 31, *ceremony*
 cerrar, 11, *to close*
 cerveza (f.), 14, *beer*
 cesar, 27, *to cease*
 chanza (f.), 52, *joke*
 charla (f.), 23, *chatter*
 chato, 21, *flat*
 chelin, 14, *shilling*
 chico, 19, *small*
 chico, el, 19, *boy*
 chimenea (f.), 48, *chimney*
 chocolate (m.), 6, *chocolate*
 choque (m.), 22, *shock, collision*
 cielo (m.), 21, *sky, heaven*
 cierto, 27, *certain*
 cigarro, 5, *cigar*
 ciudad, (f.), 3, *city*
 claro, 31, *clear*
 clase (f.), 1, 40, *class, quality*
 clavar, 26, *to nail*
 cocina (f.), 2, *kitchen*
 cojer, 22, *to catch*

colchón (m.), 45, *mattress*
 colegio (m.), 27, *college*
 cólera (f.), 29, *anger*
 colocación (f.), 26, *place, situation*
 color (m.), 1, *colour*
 comedor (m.), 2, *dining-room*
 comentario (m.), 40, *commentary*
 comer, 11, *to dine*
 comerciante, 13, *merchant*
 comercio, 22, *business*
 comercio del interior, 24, *home trade*
 cometer, 57, *to commit*
 comida (f.), 4, *dinner*
 como, 2, 3, *how*
 como, 13, *as*
 cómodo, 7, *comfortable*
 compañero, 23, *companion*
 complacer * á, 14, *to please*
 componer *, 40, *to compose*
 compra (f.), 6, *purchase*
 comprador (m.), 7, *buyer*
 comprar, 4, *to buy*
 comprender, 25, *to understand*
 compulsión (f.), 36, *compulsion*
 común, 20, *common*
 con, 2, *with*
 conceder, 27, *to concede*
 concedido, por, 36, *as granted*
 concepto (m.), 63, *idea*
 concierto (m.), 34, *concert*
 conducir *, 31, *to conduct*
 confesar *, 29, *to confess*
 conformar, 32, *to conform*
 conforme, 20, *exact, agreeable*
 conjugar, 16, *to conjugate*
 conocer *, 16, *to know*
 conocimiento (m.), 20, *knowledge, bill of lading*
 consecuencia (f.), 40, *consequence*
 conseguir, 27, *to get*
 consentir *, 25, *to consent*
 considerar, 36, *to consider*
 constar, 28, *to be clear*
 consuelo (m.), 38, *consolation*
 consultar, 23, *to consult*
 contabilidad (f.), 26, *book-keeping*
 contar *, 30, *to count*
 contar con, 52, *to rely on*
 contestar, 24, *to reply*
 continente (m.), 19, *continent*
 continuamente, 10, *continually*
 continuar, 22, *to continue*

contraer *, 48, *to contract*
 contratiempo (m.), 50, *mischance*
 contrincante (m.), 52, *competitor*
 controversia (f.), 37, *controversy*
 convencerse *, 25, *to become convinced*
 conveniente, 24, *suitable*
 convenir *, 25, *to agree, to suit*
 convidar, 37, *to invite*
 copiar, 8, *to copy*
 corazón (m.), 26, *heart*
 corbata (f.), 8, *neck-tie*
 corregir *, 13, *to correct*
 correo (m.), 6, *post*
 correspondencia, (f.), 16, *correspondence*
 corriente (f.), 16, *current*
 cortar, 47, *to cut*
 cortedad (f.), 38, *shortness*
 cosa (f.), 15, *thing*
 coser, 41, *to sew*
 costar *, 30, *to cost*
 costumbre (f.), 22, *custom*
 costurera, 39, *dressmaker*
 creer *, 13, 20, *to believe*
 crema (f.), 8, *cream*
 creo que sí (que no), 12, *I think so (not)*
 criado (m.), 10, *servant*
 crimen (m.), 40, *crime*
 cristal (m.), 53, *crystal, looking-glass*
 cuan, 49, *how*
 cuando, 6, 9, *when*
 cuando, de cuando en, 42, *now and then*
 cuanto, 14, 16, *how much, as much*
 cuanto antes, 24, *as soon as possible*
 cuanto hace, 19, *how long*
 cuantos, 15, *as many, how many*
 cuarto, (m.), 2, *room*
 cubrir (cubierto), 50, *to cover*
 cuchara (f.), 22, *spoon*
 cuchillo (m.), 16, *knife*
 cuello (m.), 58, *neck, collar*
 cuenta (f.), 4, *account*
 cuerda (f.), 44, *cord*
 cuero (m.), 27, *leather*
 cuerpo (m.), 31, *body*
 cuestas, á, 48, *on one's back*
 cuestión (f.), 52, *question*
 cuidado (m.), 48, *care*
 cuidar, 35, *to care*

culpa (f.), 27, *fault*
 culpable, 25, *blameable*
 cumplimiento (m.), 36, *compliment*
 cumplir, 32, *to perform*
 cuyo, 17, *whose*

D.

dañarse, 41, *to hurt, harm*
 daño, 37, *harm*
 dar *, 9, *to give*
 dar cabida, 31, *to harbour*
 de, 1, *of*
 debajo de, 8, *underneath*
 deber, 6, 19, 20, *to owe, to must*
 deber el (m.), 28, *duty*
 debilidad (f.), 35, *weakness*
 decidirse, 13, *to decide*
 decir *, 14 (dicho), *to tell, say*
 defecto (m.), 45, *defect*
 degradar, 41, *to degrade*
 dejar, 15, *to let, leave*
 dejar caer, 22, *to let fall*
 dejar de, 24, *to cease*
 dejar dicho, 48, *to leave word*
 del (m.), 1, *of the*
 del todo, 20, *at all*
 delante de, 19, *before*
 delgado, 44, *thin*
 delicioso, 36, *delicious*
 demás, lo, 36, *remainder*
 demasiado, 24, *too, too much*
 dentista (m.), 23, *dentist*
 dentro de, 3, *within*
 dependiente, 1, *clerk*
 derecho, 22, *right, straight*
 derrotar, *to defeat*
 desacreditado, 27, *discredited*
 desagradable, 23, *disagreeable*
 desapacible, 21, *unpleasant*
 desayunar, 45, *to breakfast*
 descalzo, 39, *barefoot*
 descansar, 11, *to rest*
 descompuesto, 35, *discomposed*
 descontento, 33, *discontent, dissatisfaction*
 descubrir (descubierto), 41, *to discover*
 descuido, 26, *neglect*
 desde, 19, *since, from*
 desear, 5, *to desire*
 desgracia, por, 22, *unfortunately*

desgraciado, 33, *unfortunate*
 deslizar, 52, *to slip*
 despachar, 24, *to despatch*
 despacho, 3, *office*
 despejado, 37, *smart, quick*
 despedirse *, 36, *to bid good-bye*
 despertar *, 24, *to waken*
 despreciar, 27, *to despise*
 desprecio (m.), 22, *contempt*
 despues de, 22, *after*
 desventura (f.), 26, *calamity*
 detenidamente, 15, *carefully*
 devolver *, 22, *to give back*
 dia (m.), 9, *day*
 diariamente, 35, *daily*
 dibujar, 11, *to sketch*
 dibujo (m.), 15, *sketch*
 diccionario (m.), 16, *dictionary*
 dictamen (m.), 37, *judgment*
 dificil, 4, *difficult*
 digno, 28, *worthy*
 dinero (m.), 4, *money*
 Dios, 25, *God*
 dirección (f.), 16, *address*
 dirigir, 24, *to direct*
 discípulo, 18, *pupil*
 disculpa (f.), 17, *excuse*
 discurrir, 43, *to discourse, to scheme*
 discurso (m.), 58, *discourse*
 diseño (m.), 33, *design*
 disfrutar, 21, *to enjoy*
 disparate (m.), 42, *nonsense*
 dispensar, 56, *to excuse*
 disposición, 33, *disposition*
 distancia, 24, *distance*
 distinguir, 17, *to distinguish*
 docto, 36, *learned*
 doler *, 23, *to pain*
 dolor (m.), 12, *pain*
 don, 59, *gift*
 donde, 2, 11, *where*
 dormir *, 27, *to sleep*
 dudar, 25, *to doubt*
 dueño (m.), 27, *owner*
 dulce, 4, *sweet*
 durar, 26, *to last*

E.

é, 26, *and*
 echar, 6, 23, *to throw*

echar á perder, 26, *to spoil*
 echar de menos, 26, *to miss*
 edad (f.), 19, *age*
 edificar, 38, *to build*
 edificio, 6, *building*
 educación (f.), 26, *education*
 educar, 37, *to educate*
 efecto (m.), 40, *effect*
 efectuar, 26, *to accomplish*
 ejercicio (m.), 11, *exercise*
 elegancia (m.), 56, *elegance*
 elegir *, 33, *to select*
 elevar, 26, *to raise*
 empaquetar, 12, *to parcel*
 empeñar, 31, *to pledge (reflective), to insist*
 empezar *, 12, *to begin*
 empleado, 40, *employee*
 emplear, 37, *to employ*
 empresa, 18, *undertaking*
 en, 2, *in*
 encaje (m.), 8, *lace*
 encantador, 23, *charming*
 encargar, 25, *to charge*
 encargo (m.), 44, *duty, charge*
 encarnado, 7, *red*
 encender *, 15, *to light*
 encendio (m.), 60, *the fire*
 encontrar *, 16, *to meet, find*
 encuadrinar, 38, *to bind (books)*
 enfermizo, 4, *sickly*
 enfermo, 2, *ill*
 engañar, 37, *to cheat*
 en lugar de, 24, *instead of*
 enhorabuena (f.), 32, *felicitation*
 enojarse, 23, *to get vexed*
 enseñar, 10, *to teach, show*
 entender *, 13, *to understand*
 entonces, 24, *then*
 entrar, 11, *to enter*
 entrega (f.), 23, *delivery*
 entregar, 9, *to deliver*
 entremeterse, 15, *to meddle*
 enviar, 9, *to send*
 envilecer *, 41, *to vilify*
 época (f.), 21, *epoch, time*
 equipaje (m.), 9, *luggage*
 equivocación, 17, *mistake*
 equivocarse, 12, *to be mistaken*
 erudito, 28, *learned*
 escalera (f.), 29, *staircase*
 escapar, 27, *to escape*

esclavitud (f.), 39, *slavery*
 escoger, 15, *to choose*
 esconder, 13, *to hide*
 escribir, 11, *to write*
 escrupulo (m.), 40, *scruple*
 escuchar, 17, *to listen*
 escuela (f.), 4, *school*
 ese, a, 2, *that*
 esmero (m.), 23, *careful attention*
 especial, 15, *special*
 espectador (m.), 28, *spectator*
 esperanza (f.), 31, *hope*
 esperar, 11, *to hope, to wait, to expect*, 28
 esposo, 59, *husband, spouse*
 esquina (f.), 9, *corner*
 estación, 1, 5, *station*
 estado, 4, *state*
 estar, 2, *to be*
 estar de vuelta, 30, *to be back*
 estar por, 36, *to be inclined*
 este, o, a, 1, *this*
 este, 18, *the latter*
 estrecho, 22, *narrow*
 estudiante, 18, *student*
 estudiar, 5, *to study*
 evitar, 15, *to avoid*
 exagerar, 56, *to exaggerate*
 examen (m.), 48, *examination*
 examinar, 15, *to examine*
 exceptuar, 31, *to except*
 excusa (f.), 12, *excuse*
 excusado, 36 { *superfluous*
 unnecessary
 excusar, 36, *to excuse*
 éxito, 17, *end, success*
 éxito, tener, 17, *to be successful*
 explicación (f.), 31, *explanation*
 explicar, 52, *to explain*
 exponer *, 27, *to expose*
 expresar, 23, *to express*
 extraño, 27, *strange*
 extender *, 42, *to extend*
 extraordinario, 15, *extraordinary*
 extranjero, 16, *foreign*
 extranjero, al, 16, *abroad*

F.

fábrica (f.), 17, *factory*
 fabricante (m.), 11, *manufacturer*

fabricar, 22, *to manufacture*
 facilidad (f.), 22, *ease*
 fácilmente, 38, *easily*
 factura (f.), 12, *invoice*
 facturar, 38, *to invoice*
 faja (f.), 17, *belt*
 falso, 44, *false*
 falta (f.), 8, *fault*
 falta, *hacer**, 21, *to be in want of*
 faltar, 48, *to fail*
 faltarle, 21, *to be wanting*
 familia (f.), 41, *family*
 fardo (m.), 20, *bale*
 fastidiarse, 59, *to be weary*
 fastidio (m.), 47, *weariness*
 favor, 12, *favour*
 faz (f.), 42, *face, front*
 fecha (f.), 10, *date*
 fechar, 10, *to date*
 felicidad (f.), 37, *happiness*
 feliz, 9, *happy*
 feo, 8, *ugly*
 ferro-carril (m.), 5, *railway*
 fieltro (m.), 14, *felt*
 fiesta (f.), 21, *feast*
 figurarse, 18, *to imagine*
 fin (m.), 6, *end*
 fines, 22, *one of the last days*
 fino, 17, *fine*
 firmar, 38, *to sign*
 firme, 27, *firm*
 flor (f.), 16, *flower*
 flaqueza (f.), 28, *weakness*
 fonda (f.), 7, *inn, hotel*
 fondos, 20, *funds*
 forastero (m.), 36, *stranger*
 formar, 30, *to form*
 fósforo (m.), 15, *match*
 fotografía (f.), 28, *photograph*
 frac (m.), 24, *frock-coat*
 francamente, 14, *frankly*
 frasco (m.), 53, *flask*
 frase (f.), 24, *phrase*
 fresco, 11, *fresh*
 frío (m.), 19, *cold*
 fruta (f.), 3, *fruit*
 fuera, 52, *out*
 fuerte, 23, *strong*
 fumar, 19, *to smoke*
 funcionar, 55, *to act, work (a machine)*

G.

gabán (m.), 5, *overcoat*
 gabinete (m.), 35, *sitting-room*
 galeria (f.), 15, *gallery*
 gallina (f.), 34, *hen*
 gana, de buena, 15, *willingly*
 gana, tener, 24, *to be in the humour*
 ganar, 5, *to gain, win*
 ganga (f.), 39, *bargain*
 gas (m.), 7, *gas*
 gastar, 5, *to spend*
 gasto (m.), 27, *expense*
 gefe (m.) 20, *chief*
 general, por lo, 21, *generally*
 generalmente, 12, *generally*
 géneros, 14, *goods*
 generosidad, 47, *generosity*
 gente (f.), 21, *people*
 gerente (m.), 16, *manager*
 girar, 57, *to turn*
 gorra (f.), 20, *cap*
 gota (f.), 21, *drop*
 gozo (m.), 57, *pleasure*
 gracias (f.), 15, *thanks*
 gramática (f.), 3, *grammar*
 grande, 3, *large*
 granizar, 21, *to hail*
 grave, 37, *grave*
 gritar, 11, *to shout*
 guante, 8, *glove*
 guapo, 21, *fine, spruce*
 guardar, 22, *to keep*
 guerra (f.), 25, *war*
 gusto (m.), 6, *taste, pleasure*

H.

haber *, 3, *to have*
 haber de, 19, *to have to*
 hablar, 3, *to talk*
 hacer *, 11, *to do*
 hacer, 19, *ago*
 hacer bien, 22, *to do right*
 hacer caso, 23, *to take notice*
 hacer daño, 29, *to hurt*
 hacer el favour, 12, *to do the favour, please*
 hacer frente, 28, *to face*
 hacer hacer, 24, *to get done*
 hacer falta, 49, *to be wanting*

hacerse *, 24, *to become*
 hallar, 5, *to find*
 hambre (f.), 19, *hunger*
 hasta, 12, *until*
 hasta, 12, *as far as*
 hay (haber), 3, *there is, are*
 hay (no hay de que), 20, *don't mention it.*
 helar *, 21, *to freeze*
 hermano (m.), 2, *brother*
 hermoso, 7, *beautiful*
 hijo (m.), 18, *son*
 hilo (m.), 48, *thread*
 hipócrita (m.), 52, *hypocrite*
 hombre (m.), 1, *man*
 hombro (m.), 55, *shoulder*
 honor (m.), 32, *honour*
 honra (f.), 32, *honour*
 honrado, 28, *honourable*
 honroso, 26, *honest*
 hora, 5, *hour*
 hoy, 6, *to-day*
 huelga (f.), 23, *strike*
 huésped (m.), 31, *guest*
 huevo (m.), 10, *egg*
 hule (m.), 50, *oilcloth*
 humano, 31, *human*
 húmedo, 21, *damp*
 humilde, 26, *humble*
 humor (m.), 33, *humour*
 hundir, 58, *to sink, destroy*

I.

idiotismo (m.), 22, *idiom*
 ignorar, 40, *not to know*
 igual, 32, *equal*
 igualar, 27, *to equalize*
 imagen (m.), 28, *image*
 impedir *, 23, *to impede*
 importancia (f.), 15, *importance*
 importante, 20, *important*
 importar, 22, *to matter*
 importunar, 46, *to importune*
 imposible, 16, *impossible*
 imprevisto, 49, *unforeseen*
 inaguantable, 28, *unbearable*
 incapaz, 28, *incapable*
 incomodidad (f.), 41, *inconvenience*
 inconveniente, 22, *inconvenient, objection*

indicar, 24, *to indicate*
 industria (f.), 31, *industry*
 infeliz, 27, *unhappy*
 informe (m.), 18, *report*
 inmenso, 39, *immense*
 insensible, 36, *unfeeling*
 insolencia, 47, *insolence*
 insopportable, 21, *insupportable*
 instrucción (f.), 24, *instruction*
 instruido, 37, *learned*
 intención (f.), 13, *intention*
 interesante, 5, *interesting*
 interrumpir, 42, *to interrupt*
 íntimo, 17, *intimate*
 invierno (m.), 19, *winter*
 invitar, 27, *to invite*
 ir *, 13, *to go*
 ir á, 13, *to be going to*
 ira (f.), 31, *wrath*
 irse *, 41, *to go away*
 izquierdo, 22, *left*

J.

jabón (m.), 21, *soap*
 jamás, 32, *ever, never*
 jamón (m.), 13, *ham*
 jardín (m.), 2, *garden*
 jofaina (f.), 43, *washbowl*
 joven (m. and f.), 5, *young man (woman)*
 jugar *, 5, *to play*
 juicio (m.), 24, *judgment*
 junto, 15, *near*
 justo, 21, *just*
 juventud (f.), 29, *youth*
 juzgar, 26, *to judge*

L.

lado (m.), 20, *side*
 ladrón (m.), 22, *thief*
 lágrima (f.), 42, *tear*
 lanchero (m.), 16, *boatman*
 lápiz (m.), 1, *pencil*
 largo, 4, *long*
 lástima (f.), 21, *pity*
 latir, 46, *to beat*
 lavado (m.), 24, *washing*
 lavandera (f.), 24, *washerwoman*

lección (f.), 4, *lesson*
 leche (f.), 5, *milk*
 leer, 18, *to read*
 lejos, 39, *far*
 lengua (f.), 20, *tongue*
 lenguaje (m.), 24, *language*
 levantarse, 21, *to rise*
 liar, 58, *to bind*
 libertad (f.), 22, *liberty*
 libra (f.), 36, *pound*
 libre, 39, *free*
 librería (f.), 11, *bookshop*
 libro (m.), 1, *book*
 ligero, 31, *light*
 limosna (f.), 14, *alms*
 limpio, 4, *clean*
 limpio, sacar en, 48, *to make a fair copy*
 listo, 3, *sharp, ready*
 lista (f.), 37, *stripe*
 literatura (f.), 39, *literature*
 loco, 24, *mad*
 lógico, 54, *logic*
 lograr, 44, *to obtain*
 losa, 53, *flag (stone)*
 lucha (f.), 39, *struggle*
 luego, 51, *soon, immediately*
 lugar (m.), 24, *place*
 lugar (en lugar de), 15, *instead of*
 luz (f.), 9, *light*

L.

llamar, 10, *to call*
 llamarse, 10, *to be named*
 llano, 44, *plain*
 llegar, 9, *to arrive*
 llevar, 9, *to take, carry*
 llevar á cabo, 48, *to carry through*
 llorar, 20, *to weep*
 llover *, 21, 45, *to rain*
 lluvia (f.), 21, *rain*
 lluvioso, 28, *rainy*

M.

madre, 2, *mother*
 maduramente, 48, *naturally*
 madurar, 36, *to mature*
 maestro, 7, *teacher*

magnífico, 21, *magnificent*
 mal, 15, *evil*
 maleta (f.), 20, *travelling bag*
 malevolencia, 31, *ill-nature*
 malo, 7, *bad*
 maltratar, 37, *to ill-treat*
 manchado, 16, *stained*
 mandar, 12, *to order*
 mandar á pasear, 32, *to send about one's business*
 manejar, 51, *to manage*
 manera, 25, 27, *manner, way*
 manía, 39, *extravagance*
 mano (f.), 3, *hand*
 mantenerse *, 38, *to maintain, keep*
 mantequilla, 4, *butter*
 manzana (f.), 11, *apple*
 máquina, 40, *machine*
 maravilla (f.), 35, *marvel*
 marcharse, 23, *to go away*
 marido, 26, *husband*
 marinero, 47, *sailor*
 más, 7, *more*
 matar (muerto), 27, *to kill*
 matrimonio, 54, *married couple*
 mayor, 18, *greater, elder*
 media, 8, *stocking*
 mediar, 31, *to mediate*
 médico, 16, *doctor*
 medio (m.), 41, *half*
 medios, 46, *means*
 megilla (f.), 55, *cheek*
 mejor, 18, *better*
 melocotón (m.), 21, *peach*
 memoria (f.), 36, *memory*
 mencionar, 14, *to mention*
 mendigo, 8, *beggar*
 menor, 18, *least*
 menos, 18, *less*
 menos, echar de, 26, *to miss*
 mentir *, 28, *to lie*
 mentira (f.), 36, *lie*
 menudito, 39, *particular*
 menudo á, 18, *often*
 mercado (m.), 11, *market*
 mercancías (f.), 12, *goods*
 mercantil, 4, 18, *mercantile*
 merecer *, 14, *to merit*
 mes (m.), 14, *month*
 mesa (f.), 2, *table*
 meter, 41, *to put*
 miedo (m.), 19, *fear*

mientras, 16, *meanwhile*
 mirar, 21, *to look at*
 miseria (f.), 37, *misery*
 modista, 8, *milliner*
 modo (m.), 22, *manner, way*
 molestar, 22, *to trouble*
 momento (m.), 24, *moment*
 monja (f.), 39, *nun*
 monte (m.), 31, *mountain, hill*
 montón (m.), 63, *heap*
 morir (*muerto*) 30, *to die*
 mostrar *, 10, *to show*
 motivo (m.), 37, *motive*
 mover *, 30, *to move*
 muchacha, 18, *girl*
 muchacho, 4, *boy*
 muchísimo, 11, *very much*
 mucho, 6, *much*
 mudanza, 47, *change*
 mudar, 20, 22, *to change*
 muela (f.), 23, *tooth (molar)*
 muestra (f.), 8, *sample*
 mujer, 8, *woman, 28, wife*
 mundo, todo el, 21, *everybody*
 músico, 36, *musician*
 mútuo, 20, *mutual*
 muy, 1, *very*

N.

nación (f.), 1, *nation*
 nacional, 4, *national*
 nada, 12, *nothing*
 nadar, 16, *to swim*
 nadie, 13, *nobody*
 nariz (f.), 21, *nose*
 naturaleza (f.), 54, *nature*
 navidad (f.), 36, *Christmas*
 necesario, 5, *necessary*
 necesidad (f.), 33, *necessity*
 necesitar, 6, *to need*
 negar *, 12, *to deny*
 negocio, 10, *business*
 negro, 1, *black*
 nevar *, 21, *to snow*
 ninguno, 3, *none*
 niña, 3, *girl*
 ninez (f.), 49, *childhood*
 niño, 19, *child*
 noche (f.), 16, *night*
 norte (m.), 8, *north*

noticias (m.), 6, *news*
 nube (f.), 46, *cloud*
 nuevo, 20, *new*
 nuevo, de, 14, *again*

O.

ó, 1, *or*
 obedecer *, 33, *to obey*
 objeción (f.), 22, *objection*
 objeto (m.), 60, *object*
 obligar, 26, *to oblige*
 obra (f.), 57, *work*
 obsequiar, 11, *to wait upon, to be attentive*
 obsequio (m.), 10, *civility*
 obtener *, 27, *to obtain*
 ocasión (f.), 22, *occasion*
 ocurrir, 15, *to occur*
 ocupado, 7, *busy*
 ofender, 20, *to offend*
 oferta (f.), 20, *offer*
 oficial (m.), 19, *officer*
 oficina (f.), 6, *office*
 oír *, 40, *to hear*
 ¡ojalá! 47, *would that!*
 olvidar, 6, *to forget*
 ópera (f.), 22, *opera*
 operación (f.), 11, *transaction*
 oración, 26, *prayer*
 orario (m.), 15, *time table*
 ordenar, 50, *to put in order*
 ordinario, 20, *ordinary, common*
 organista (m.), 32, *organist*
 original (m.), 5, *original*
 oscuro, 17, *obscure, dark*
 ostentación (f.), 26, *pomp*
 otro, 2, *another*
 ovillo, 48, *clew*

P.

Pablo, 17, *Paul*
 paciencia (f.), 32, *patience*
 padre, 1, 3, *father; (pl.) parents*
 pagar, 10, *to pay*
 país, 16, *country*
 paja (f.), 63, *straw*
 pájaro (m.), 22, *bird*
 palabra (f.), 7, *word*

- palacio (m.), 9, *palace*
 palo (m.), 50, *stick*
 pan (m.), 3, *bread*
 panadero (m.), 13, *baker*
 pañuelos (m.), 6, *handkerchiefs*
 papel (m.), 3, 14, *paper*
 papel secante, 22, *blotting-paper*
 paquete (m.), 9, *packet, parcel*
 par (m.), 13, *pair*
 para, 6, 36, *for*
 para con, 36, *towards, compared with*
 paraguas (m.), 8, *umbrella*
 parar, 7, *to stop*
 parecer *, 16, *to appear, seem*
 pareja (f.), 50, *pair, couple*
 pariente (m.), 17, *relation*
 parque (m.), 2, *park*
 parte (f.), 24, *part*
 parte (m.), 36, *report*
 partir, 14, *to depart*
 pasado, 13, 19, *past*
 pasar, 15, *to pass; 19 to spend (time)*
 pasa, qué, 15, *what is to do, what's the matter*
 pasarlo, 21, *to be (in health)*
 patio (m.), 22, *yard*
 patrón (m.), 46, *landlord*
 paz (f.), 26, *peace*
 pecado (m.), 51, *sin*
 pecho (m.), 31, *chest, breast*
 pedazo (m.), 21, *piece*
 pedir *, 14, *to ask for*
 pelear, 36, *to fight*
 peligro (m.), 28, *danger*
 pelillos (m.), 48, *trifles*
 pelo, (m.), 42, *hair*
 pena (f.), 14, *pain, trouble*
 pensar *, 14, *to think*
 peor, 18, *worse*
 pequeño, 7, 18, *small*
 pera, 36, *pear*
 perder *, 15, *to lose*
 perder, echar á, 27, *to spoil*
 perder el juicio, 24, *to become mad*
 pérdida (f.), 20, *loss*
 perezoso, 23, *idle*
 perfeccionar, 38, *to improve*
 perfectamente, 21, *perfectly*
 perfecto, 31, *perfect*
 periódico (m.), 1, *newspaper*
- permiso (m.), 15, *permission*
 permitir, 15, *to permit*
 pero, 3, *but*
 perro (m.), 28, *dog*
 persona (f.), 14, *person*
 persuadir, 33, *to persuade*
 pertenecer *, 15, *to belong*
 perverso, 28, *perverse*
 pesar, 51, *to weigh*
 pescado, 6, *fish*
 peso, 18, *weight, dollar*
 pié (m.), 6, *foot*
 pieza (f.), 2, *piece*
 píldora (f.), 46, *pill*
 pintura (f.), 15, *painting*
 piso, 29, *flight, floor*
 placer (m.), 16, *pleasure*
 platillo (m.), 53, *saucer*
 plazo (m.), 26, *term*
 plegar *, 29, *to fold*
 pluma (f.), 1, *pen*
 pobre, 8, *poor*
 poco, 5, 51, *little*
 poder *, 14, *to be able*
 poderoso, 31, *powerful*
 policía, 27, *police*
 polvo (m.), 21, *dust*
 poner *, 15, 28, *to put*
 ponerse *, 24, *to become*
 por, 14, 36, *for, by, through*
 pormenores (m.), 24, *particulars*
 porque, 14, *why, because*
 porte, 12, *carriage, postage*
 portugués, 25, *Portuguese*
 poseer, 28, *to possess*
 posesión (f.), 28, *possession*
 posible, 29, *possible*
 precio (m.), 12, *price*
 precisamente, 44, *exactly*
 preciso, 21, *necessary*
 predicador (m.), 21, *preacher*
 preferir *, 13, *to prefer*
 pregonar, 53, *to call (wares)*
 preguntar, 1, 14 *to ask (a question)*
 premio, 27, *prize*
 preposición (f.), 22, *preposition*
 prescindir, 37, *to lay aside*
 presentar, 21, *to present*
 preso (m.), 40, *prisoner*
 prestamista, 48, *lender*
 prestar, 14, *to lend*
 pretender, 56, *to try for*

primero, 20, *first*
 primo (m.), 17, *cousin*
 principal, 15, *principal*
 príncipe (m.), 4, *prince*
 principiante (m.), 36, *beginner*
 principiar, 5, *to begin*
 principio (m.), 4, *beginning*
 principios, 22, *one of the 1st days*
 prisa, de, 21, *hurriedly*
 privar, 27, *to deprive*
 probar *, 16, *to prove*
 proceso (m.), 26, *lawsuit*
 procurar, 47, *to try*
 profesor (m.), 27, *teacher*
 progreso, 23, *progress*
 prohibir, 15, *to prohibit*
 prometer, 13, *to promise*
 pronto, 14, 18, *soon*
 pronunciar, 10, *to pronounce*
 propio, 17, *proper, one's own*
 proponer *, 44, *to propose*
 propósito, 19, *purpose*
 proteger, 15, *to protect*
 provecho (m.), 11, *advantage*
 proverbio (m.), 22, *proverb*
 proyectar, 48, *to project*
 proyecto (m.), 23, *project*
 prudente, 13, *prudent*
 prueba (f.), 41, *proof*
 puchero (m.), 48, *dish composed of meat, peas and vegetables*
 puerta (f.), 10, *door*
 pues, 12, *since, well*
 puesto, 40, *post*
 pulso (m.), 31, *pulse*
 punto (m.), 29, 38, *point*

Q.

que, 1, 12, 18, 20, 33, *than, that, which, who*
 quedar, 19, 22, *to remain*
 quejarse, 22, *to complain*
 quejoso, 37, *plaintful*
 quemar, 26, *to burn*
 querer *, 7, 12, 18, *to will, love*
 querer decir *, 23, *to mean*
 quien, 1, *who*
 quisiera, 16, *should, would like*
 uitar, 24, 47, *to take off (away)*
 quizás, 22, *perhaps*

R.

rara vez, 51, *rarely*
 rato (m.), 40, *period*
 raya (f.), 37, *stripe*
 razón (f.), 19, *reason*
 real, 19, *royal*
 rebosar, 31, *to overflow, abound*
 rechazar, 20, *to reject, spurn*
 recibir, 15, *to receive*
 recíproco, 41, *reciprocal*
 recoger, 16, *to pick up*
 recomendar, 29, *to recommend*
 recompensar, 37, *to recompense*
 recordar *, 20, *to recollect*
 recto, 39, *right*
 red (f.), 31, *net*
 refirirse *, 13, *to refer*
 refrán (m.), 20, *proverb*
 regatear, 49, *to barter*
 región (f.), 36, *region*
 regreso (m.), 22, *return*
 rehusar, 20, *to refuse*
 reina, 9, *queen*
 reirse de *, 33, *to laugh at*
 relatar, 28, *to relate*
 reloj (m.), 7, *watch*
 remindar *, 24, *to mend*
 remedio (m.), 60, *remedy*
 renovar, 49, *to renew*
 reparar, 22, *to repair, notice*
 repartir, 15, *to divide*
 repente, de, 56, *suddenly*
 repetir *, 33, *to repeat*
 resfriado (m.), 23, *cold*
 resguardar, 55, *to protect*
 resignación, 40, *resignation*
 resistir, 26, *to resist*
 resolución, 28, *resolution*
 resolver *, 28, *to resolve*
 respetar, 26, *to respect*
 respeto, 44, *respect*
 responder, 27, *to respond*
 respuesta, 3, *reply*
 restablecerse *, 23, *to recover from an illness*
 restante, 44, *remaining*
 resultado, 11, *result*
 resultar, 15, *to result*
 retrato (m.), 57, *portrait*
 rey, 9, *king*
 rico, 4, *rich*

riesgo, 41, *risk*
 rigurosamente, 27, *rigorously*
 riña (f.), 31, *quarrel*
 rincón (m.), 48, *corner*
 río (m.), 23, *river*
 rogar *, 24, *to beg*
 rojo, 7, *red*
 ronco, 23, *hoarse*
 ropa (f.), 8, *clothing*
 ruborizarse, 42, *to blush*
 rueda, 57, *wheel*
 ruído, 22, *noise*
 rústico, 56, *rustic*

S.

saber, 16, *to know*; 34, *to taste*
 sacar, 23, *to draw out*
 sacrificio (m.), 27, *sacrifice*
 sagrado, 49, *sacred*
 salir, 16, 17, *to go out*, *to start*, *to turn out*
 salir fiador, 41, *to go bail*
 salud (f.), 31, *health*
 salvo, 40, *except*
 sanar, 56, *to heal*, *cure*
 sangre (f.), 42, *blood*
 sastre (m.), 10, *tailor*
 satisfacción (f.), 31, *satisfaction*
 secante, 22, *drying*
 seco, 21, *dry*
 sed (f.), 19, *thirst*
 seda (f.), 30, *silk*
 seguir *, 57, *to follow*
 según, 23, *according to*
 seguro, 16, *sure*
 seguridad, tener * la, 22, *to be sure*
 selección (f.), 38, *selection*
 sello (m.), 6, *stamp*
 semana, 13, 35, *week*
 señalar, 47, *to point out*
 señas (f.), 26, *address*
 sencillo, 48, *simple*
 sentar *, 32, *to place*, (*reflex*), *to sit down*
 sentido (m.), 49, *sense*
 señor, 1, *sir*, *gentleman*
 señorita, 19, *miss*
 sentarle *, 24, *to fit*
 sentarse *, 12, *to sit down*
 sentir *, 14, *to feel*

sentirlo *, 29, *to be sorry*
 ser *, 1, 24, *to be*
 sereno, 39, *clear*, *watchman*
 sermón (m.), 21, *sermon*
 servicio (m.), 26, *service*
 servilleta (f.), 24, *napkin*
 servir *, 25, *to serve*
 servirse *, 24, *to be pleased to use*
 severidad (f.), 46, *severity*
 severo, 4, *severe*
 si, 10, *if*
 si, 2, *yes*
 siempre, 13, *always*
 significar, 47, *to mean*
 siguiente, 25, *following*
 silla (f.), 14, *chair*
 sillón (m.), 31, *armchair*
 simpleza (f.), 48, *simpleness*
 sin, 22, 27, *without*
 sino, 19, *but*
 sirvase V., 12, *please*
 sisar, 47, *to pilfer*, *crib*
 sistema (m.), 27, *system*
 sitio (m.), 16, *place*
 soberbia (f.), 32, *pride*
 sobrar, 28, *to have plenty* (see lesson)
 sobre, 2, *upon*; (m.), *an envelope*
 sobrescrito (m.), 35, *envelope*
 socorrer, 27, *to succour*
 sofocante, 21, *stifling*
 sol (m.), 21, *sun*
 soldado, 18, *soldier*
 soler *, 15, *to be wont*
 solo (m.), 13, *alone*
 soltar *, 28, *to loosen*
 sombra (f.), 39, *shade*
 sombrero (m.), 1, *hat*
 someter, 13, *to submit*
 soñar *, 50, *to dream*
 sonido (m.), 15, *sound*
 soportar, 40, *to support*
 sordo, 13, *deaf*
 sorprender, 41, *to surprise*
 soslayo, de, 47, *sidewise*
 soso, 39, *insipid*
 sostenerse *, 58, *to sustain*
 subir, 23, *to ascend*
 subjuntivo, 22, *subjunctive*
 suceder, 15, *to happen*
 suceso (m.), 58, *event*
 sucio, 2, *dirty*
 suelo (m.), 53, *ground*, *floor*

sueño, 41, *dream, sleep*
 suerte (f.), 20, *lot, fortune*
 sumamente, 37, *exceedingly*
 suplicar, 24, *to supplicate*
 suponer *, 39, *to suppose*
 supuesto, por, 36, *of course*
 surtido (m.), 21, *collection, assortment*
 suspirar, 26, *to sigh*
 sustentar, 50, *to sustain*

T.

tabaco (m.), 17, *tobacco*
 tal, 34, 59, *such*
 tambien, 4, *also*
 tampoco, 16, *neither, either*
 tan, 17, 18, *so*
 tanto, 18, *so much*
 tardar, 21, *to delay*
 tarde, 18, *late ; (f.) evening*
 tarjeta, 14, 29, *card*
 taza (f.), 54, *cup*
 teatro (m.), 3, *theatre*
 temblar *, 52, *to tremble*
 temer, 23, *to fear*
 tempestad (f.), 32, *storm*
 temprano, 15, *early*
 temporada (f.), 50, *season*
 tendero (m.), 19, *shopkeeper*
 tenedor (m.), 22, *fork*
 tener *, 3, *to have*
 tener (in idioms), 19, 24, 28 (*various*)
 teñir, 24, *to dye*
 ternura (f.), 41, *tenderness*
 terreno (m.), 58, *ground*
 tertulia (f.), 38, *party (at home)*
 tía, 17, *aunt*
 tiempo (m.), 11, *time, weather*
 tienda (f.), 2, *shop*
 tierra (f.), 28, *land*
 tinta (f.), 1, *ink*
 tintero (m.), 3, *inkstand*
 toalla, 21, *towel*
 tocar, 36, *to touch, play an instrument*
 todavia, 4, *yet*
 todo, 7, *all (see Lesson 56)*
 tomar, 9, *to take*
 tostada (f.), 21, *toast*
 trabajar, 18, *to work*

trabajo, 5, *work*
 traducción, 17, *translation*
 traducir *, 16, *to translate*
 traer *, 11, *to bring*
 tragár, 46, *to swallow*
 traje (m.), 10, *suit*
 trasladarse, 37, *to move, to go to*
 tratar, 52, *to treat*
 travieso, 39, *naughty*
 triunfo (m.), 39, *triumph*
 triste, 2, *sad*
 tronar *, 21, *to thunder*
 tropezar *, 29, *to stumble*

U.

último (m.), 34, *last*
 últimos, 22, *one of the latter days*
 único, 25, *only*
 Universidad, 23, *University*
 usar, 53, *to use*
 útil, 7, *useful*
 uva (f.), 34, *grape*.

V.

vacación (f.), 15, *holiday*
 vacío, 39, *empty*
 valer *, 18, 26, 34, *to be worth*
 vanidad (f.), 31, *vanity*
 vapor, 16, *steam, steamer*
 vara (f.), 18, *yard measure (Spanish)*
 variable, 21, *variable*
 variar, 28, *to vary*
 varios, 11, *various*
 vaso, 22, *glass*
 veces, á, 22, *sometimes*
 veces, hacer * las, 55, *to act as*
 vecino (m.), 18, *neighbour*
 vencer *, 61, *to conquer ; 47, to fall due (bills)*
 vender, 13, *to sell*
 venganza (f.), 31, *revenge*
 venir *, 16, *to come*
 ventaja (f.), 20, *advantage*
 ventana (f.), 19, *window*
 ver, 14, 16, *to see*
 verano (m.), 21, *summer*
 verbo (m.), 16, *verb*
 verdad (f.), 14, *truth*

veradero, 44, *true*
verde, 7, *green*
verificar, 45, *to verify, examine*
verosímil, 33, *likely*
vestido (m.), 10, *dress*
vestirse *, 33, *to dress one's self*
vez (f.), 24; en vez de, *instead of*
viajar, 14, *to travel*
viaje (m.), 6, *journey*
vida (f.), 27, *life*
vidriero, 36, *glazier*
viejo, 16, *old*
viento (m.), 21, *wind*
vigilar, 27, *to watch*
vino (m.), 1, 7, *wine*
violar, 45, *to violate*
visitar, 15, *to visit*
vivir, 13, *to live*
volante (m.), 40, *fly-wheel*

voluntad (f.), 39, *will*
volver, 21, 24, *to return*
volver, á, 24, *to do again*
voz (f.), 23, *voice*
vuelta, 12, *return ; 63, change*
(*money*)

Y.

y, 8, *and*
ya, 16, *already*

Z.

zapato, 8, *shoe*
zapatero, 19, *shoemaker*.

VOCABULARY—ENGLISH-SPANISH.

Containing most of the words used in this grammar, with the number of the lesson in which they appear. (Verbs starred are irregular).

A.

a, *un, uno, a*, 1
 abandon, to, *abandonar*, 23
 abhor, to, *aborrecer* *, 52
 able, to be, *poder* *, 14
 abound, to, *rebosar*, 31
 absent, *ausente*, 24
 accept, to, *aceptar*, 12
 accident, *accidente* (m.), 22
 accompany, to, *acompañar*, 9
 according to, *según*, 23
 account, *cuenta* (f.), 4
 accumulate, to, *acumular*, 44
 acknowledge, to, *acusar*, 23
 acquaint, to, *enterarse*, 41
 admit, to, *admitir*, 27
 advance, to, *adelantar*, 9
 advantage, *provecho* (m.), 11; *ventaja* (f.), 20
 advantage, to take, *aprovechar*, 21
 adventure, *aventura* (f.), 28
 advice, to give, *aconsejar*, 24
 advise, to, *avisar*, 23
 affair, *asunto* (m.), 17; *operación* (f.), 11
 affection, *afecto* (m.), 41
 afflicted, *aflijido*, 25
 after, *después de*, 22
 again, *de nuevo, otra vez*, 14
 age, *edad* (f.), 19
 ago, *hacer* *, 21
 agree, to, *convenir* *, 25
 agreeable, *agradable*, 33
 agriculture, *agricultura* (f.), 31
 all, *todo*, 8, 20, 56
 alleviate, to, *aliviar*, 26
 almost, *casi*, 21
 alms, *limosna* (f.), 14

alone, *solo*, 13
 already, *ya*, 16
 also, *también*, 4
 although, *aunque*, 28
 always, *siempre*, 13
 amiable, *amable*, 18
 amuse, to, *divertir* *, 31
 an, *un, uno, a*, 1
 ancient, *antiguo*, 22
 and, *y*, 8
 animal, *animal* (m.), 27
 another, *otro*, 2
 any, *alguno*, 3
 anybody, *alguien*, 13
 anything, *algo*, 6
 apple, *manzana* (f.), 11
 approach, to, *acercarse*, 23; *asomar*, 42
 approbation, *aprobación* (f.), 15
 April, *abril*, 11
 arm, *brazo* (m.), 23
 armchair, *butaca* (f.), 57
 arrange, to, *arreglar*, 26
 arrive, to, *llegar*, 9
 article, *artículo* (m.), 12
 artisan, *artesano* (m.), 23
 as, *tan*, 18
 as . . . as, *tan . . . como*, 18
 ask for, to, *pedir* *, 14
 ask, to (questions), *preguntar*, 14
 asleep, *dormido*, 37
 as much, *tanto*, 18
 assistant, *ayudante* (m.), 19
 assortment, *surtido* (m.), 21
 assassinate, *asesinar*, 38
 assure, to, *asegurar*, 22
 at, *á*, 4
 attach, to, *apegar*, 58
 attempt, *atentado*, 26

attend, to, *acudir*, 50; *asistir*, 24
 attention, *aplicación* (f.), 22; *esmero* (m.), 23; *atención* (f.), 24; *ob-sequio* (m.), 10
 attentively, *detenidamente*, 15
 August, *agosto*, 12
 aunt, *tía* (f.), 17
 author, *autor* (m.), 37
 avoid, *evitar*, 15
 await, to, *aguardar*, 23
 awake, to, *despertar* *, 24
 back, on one's, *a cuestas*, 48

B.

bad, *malo*, 7
 bag (travelling), *maleta* (f.), 20
 bail, *salir fiador*; *bait*, *cebo* (m.), 32
 baker, *panadero* (m.), 13
 bank, *banco* (m.), 12
 barefoot, *descalzo*, 39
 bargain, *ganga* (f.), 39
 basket, *canasta* (f.), 32
 bathe, to, *bañar*, 44
 battle, *batalha* (f.), 54
 be, to, *ser* *, 1; *estar* *, 2
 to be able, *poder* *, 14
 to be back, *estar* * *de vuelta*, 30; *estar* * *de regreso*, 22
 to become, *volverse* *, *ponerse* *, *hacerse* *, *ser* * *de*, 24, 30
 to be cold, *tener* * *frio*, 19
 to be convinced, *convencerte* *, 25
 to be done, *hacerse* *, 24
 to be glad, *alegrarse*, 21
 to be going to, *ir á*, 13
 to be good, *ser* * *bueno*, 1
 to be (in health), *estar* * *bueno*, 21
 to be in the humour, *tener* * *ganas*, 24
 to be hungry, *tener* * *hambre* (m.), 19
 to be long, *tardar*, 21
 to be named, *llamarse*, 10
 to be needed, *hacer* * *falta* (f.), 21
 to be right, *tener* * *razón* (f.), 19
 to be silent, *callar*, 23
 to be short of, *faltarle*, 21
 to be short of, *falta* (f.), 21
 to be slow (clock), *atrasar*, 9

to be sorrowful, *angustiarse*, 25
 to be sufficient, *bastar*, 19
 to be sure, *tener* * *la seguridad* (f.), 22
 to be, there is, are, *hay*, 31
 to be warm, *tener* * *calor* *, 19
 to be well, *estar* * *bueno*, 1
 to be wont, *soler* *, 15
 to be wrong, *no tener* * *razón* (f.), 19
 bear, to (various translations), 61
 beat, to, *azotar*, 49
 beat down, to, *abatir*, 21
 beautiful, *hermoso*, 7
 because, *porque*, 14
 become, to (various translations), 30
 bed, *cama*, 3
 bedroom, *alcoba* (f.), 8
 beer, *cerveza* (f.), 14
 before, *antes*, 18; *antes de*, *antes que*, 6, 19; *delante de*, 19
 beg, to, *rogar* *, *suplicar*, 24
 beg, to (alms), *mendigar*, 8
 beggar, *mendigo*, 8
 begin, to, *principiar*, 5; *empezar* *, 12
 beginner, *principiante* (m.), 36
 beginning, *principio* (m.), 4
 believe, to, *creer*, 13
 belong, to, *pertenecer* *, 15
 Belgium, *Bélgica*, 19
 belt, *faja* (f.), 17
 benefactor, *bienhechor* (m.), 27
 best, *mejor*, 18
 bet, to, *apostar* *, 41
 better, to be, *valer más*, 26
 bill of lading, *conocimiento* (m.), 20
 bind, to (books), *encuadrinar*, 38
 bind, to, *liar*, 58
 bird, *pájaro* (m.), 22
 black, *negro*, 1
 blame, *culpa* (f.), 27
 blamable, *culpable*, 25
 blood, *sangre* (f.), 42
 blotting, *secante*, 22
 blush, to, *ruborizarse*, 42
 blue, *azul*, 7
 board, on, *a bordo*, 16
 boatman, *lanchero* (m.), 16
 body, *cuerpo* (m.), 31
 boil, to (eggs), *pasar por agua*, 10
 book, *libro* (m.), 1

- bookcase, *armario* (m.) *para libros*, 8
 bookshop, *librería* (f.), 11
 boot, *bota* (f.), 2
Bordeaux, *Burdeos*, 27
 born, *nacido*, 37
 both, *ambos*, 59
 bottle, *botella* (f.), 58
 box, *caja* (f.), 9
 boy { *muchacho* (m.), 4
 chico (m.), 19
 brain, *cerebro* (m.), 28
 bread, *pan* (m.), 3
 break, to (a journey), *interrumpir*, 42
 breakfast, to, *desayunar*, 45
 breeches, *calzones* (m.), 28
 bring down, to, *bajar*, 19
 brocade, *brocado*, 37
 brother, *hermano* (m.), 2
 build, to, *edificar*, 38
 building, *edificio* (m.), 6
 bundle, *paquete* (*lio*) (m.), 9
 burn, to, *quemar*, 26
 business, *negocio* (m.), 10
 busy, *ocupado*, 7
 but, *pero* 3, *sino* 19
 butter, *mantequilla* (f.), 4
 buy, to, *comprar*, 4
 bicycle, *bicicleta* (f.), 35

C.

- call, to, *llamar*, 10
 call out, to (wares), *pregonar*, 53
 can, to, *poder* *, 14
 cane, *caña* (f.), 54
 cap, *gorra* (f.), 20
 capable, *capaz*, 35
 card, *tarjeta* (f.), 29
 care, *cuidado*, 48
 care, to take, *cuidar*, 35
 carpenter, *carpintero* (m.), 14
 carry, to, *llevar*, 9
 carry through, to, *llevar a cabo*, 48
 case, *caja* (f.), 9
 catch, to, *cojer*, 22
 cathedral, *catedral* (f.), 19
 cause, *causa* (f.), 23
 cautiously, *detenidamente*, 15
 cease, to, *dejar de*, 24
 cease, to, *cesar*, 27

- celebrate, to, *celebrar*, 21
 ceremony, *ceremonia* (f.), 31
 certain, *seguro*, 16; *cierto*, 27
 chair, *silla* (f.), 14
 chair, arm, *butaca* (f.), 57; *sillón* (m.), 31
 chance, *suerte* (f.), 20
 change, *mudanza* (f.), 47
 change (cash), *vuelta* (f.), 63
 change, to, *mudar*, 22; *cambiar* 7
 changeable, *cambiable*, 21; *mudable*, 21
 character, *antecedentes* (m.), 26
 charge, to, *encargar*, 25
 charmed, *encantado*, 23
 charitable, *caritativo*, 36
 cheap, *barato*, 9
 cheat, to, *engañar*, 37
 cheeks, *mejillas* (f.), 55
 cheese, *queso* (m.), 3
 chemise, *camisa* (f.), 8
 chest of drawers, *cómoda* (f.), 17
 chest, *pecho* (m.), 31
 chief, *jefe* (m.), 20
 child, *niño* (m.), 19
 childhood, *niñez* (f.), 49
 children, *hijos*, *niños* (m.), 19
 chimney, *chimenea* (f.), 48
 chocolate, *chocolate* (m.), 6
 choose, to, *escoger*, 15
 Christmas, *navidad* (f.), 36
 cigar, *cigarro* (m.), 5
 city, *ciudad* (f.), 3
 class, *clase* (f.), 2
 clean, *limpio*, 4
 clear, *claro*, 31
 clear up, to, *aclarar*, 16
 clerk, *dependiente* (m.), 1
 clew, *ovillo* (m.), 48
 climate, *clima* (m.), 12
 cloak, *capa* (f.), 58
 clock, *reloj* (m.), 7
 close, to, *cerrar* *, 11
 clothing, *ropa* (f.), 8
 cloud, *nube* (f.), 46
 coal, *carbón* (m.), 2
 coat, *frac* (m.), 24
 coffee, coffee-house, *café* (m.), 5
 college, *colegio* (m.), 27
 collision, *choque* (m.), 22
 colour, *color* (m.), 1
 come, to, *venir* *, 16

come in, to, *entrar*, 11
 comfortable, *cómodo*, 7
 commence, to, *comenzar*, 29
 comment, *comentario* (m.), 40
 commerce, *comercio* (m.), 22
 commercial, *comercial*, 18
 commit, to, *cometer*, 57
 common, *común*, 20
 companion, *compañero* (m.), 23
 complain, to, *quejarse*, 22
 compliment, *cumplimiento* (m.), 31
 comprehend, to, *comprender*, 25
 compulsion, *compulsión* (f.), 36
 concede, to, *conceder*, 27
 concert, *concierto* (m.), 34
 conduct, to, *conducir* *, 31
 confess, to, *confesar* *, 29
 conform, to, *conformar*, 32
 conjugate, to, *conjugar*, 16
 conquer, to, *vencer* *, 61
 consent, to, *consentir* *, 25
 consequence, *consecuencia* (f.), 40
 consider, to, *considerar*, 36
 consolation, *consolación* (f.), 38
 consult, to, *consultar*, 23
 contain, to, *cabrer* *, 31
 contempt, *desprecio* (m.), 22
 continent, *continente* (m.), 19
 continually, *continuamente*, 10
 continue, to, *continuar*, 22
 contract, to, *contraer* *, 48
 controversy, *controversia* (f.), 37
 convenient, *conveniente*, 24
 copiously (to rain), *a cántaros*, 45
 copy, *copia* (f.), 8
 copy, to—out, *sacar en limpio*, 48
 cord, *cuerda* (f.), 44
 corner, *esquina* (f.), 9; *rincón* (m.), 48
 correct, to, *corregir* *, 13
 correct, *conforme*, 20
 correspondence, *correspondencia* (f.), 16
 cost, to, *costar* *, 30
 cotton, *algodón* (m.), 23
 country, *pais* (m.), 16
 couple, married, *matrimonio* (m.), 54
 course, of, *por supuesto*, 36
 courteous, *cortés*, 8
 cousin, *primo* (m.), 17
 count, to, *contar* *, 30
 cover, to, *cubrir*, 50

cream, *crema* (f.), 8
 creditor, *acreedor* (m.), 50
 crime, *crimen* (m.), 40
 cross, to, *atravesar* *, 29
 cry out, to (to shout), *gritar*, 11
 culpable, *culpable*, 25
 cupboard, *armario* (m.), 8
 current, *corriente* (f.), 16
 cushion, *almohadón* (m.), 37; *almo-*
hada (f.), 45
 custom, *costumbre* (f.), 22
 cut, to, *cortar*, 47

D.

daily, *diariamente*, 35
 damaged, *averiado*, 56
 damp, *húmedo*, 21
 danger, *peligro* (m.), 28
 dare, to, *atreverse*, 25
 dark, *oscuro*, 17
 date, *fecha* (f.), 10
 date, to, *fechar*, 10
 day, *día* (m.), 9
 day before yesterday, *anteayer*, 9
 deaf, *sordo*, 13
 dear, *caro querido*, 8
 deceive, to, *engañar*, 37
 decide, to, *decidir*, 13
 defect, *defecto* (m.), 45
 delicious, *delicioso*, 36
 deliver, to, *entregar*, 9
 delivery, *entrega* (f.), 23
 dentist, *dentista* (m.), 23
 deny, to, *negar* *, 12
 depart, to, *partir*, 14
 deprive, to, *privar*, 27
 descend, to, *bajar*, 19
 design, *dibujo* (m.), 15; *diseño* (m.), 33
 desire, to, *desear*, 5
 despatch, to, *despachar*, 24
 despise, to, *despreciar*, 27
 dictionary, *diccionario* (m.), 16
 die, to, *morir* *, 30
 difficult, *difícil*, 4
 diligent, *aplicado*, 3
 dine, to, *comer*, 11
 dinner, *comida* (f.), 4
 direct, to, *dirigir*, 24
 direction, *la dirección* (f.), 16

dirty, *sucio*, 2
 disagreeable, *desagradable*, 23
 discontent, *descontento*, 33
 discover, to, *descubrir*, 41
 discredited, *desacreditado*, 27
 discuss, to, *discutir*, 43
 disgust, *asco* (m.), 43
 dismiss, to, *despedir* *, 36
 displease, to, *desagradar*, 41
 displeased, *descontento*, 33
 disposition, *disposal*, *disposición* (f.), 33
 distance, *distancia* (f.), 24
 distinguish, to, *distinguir*, 17
 divide, to, *repartir*, 15
 do, to, *hacer* *, 11
 do, to do again, *volver* * a, 24
 doctor, *médico* (m.), 16
 dog, *perro* (m.), 28
 dollar, *peso* (m.), 18
 door, *puerta* (f.), 10
 doubt, to, *dudar*, 25
 dozen, *docena* (f.), 24
 draw out, to, *sacar*, 23
 drawers, chest of, *cómoda*, 17
 drawing-room, *sala* (f.), 31
 dream, *sueño* (m.), 41
 dream, to, *soñar* *, 50
 dress, *vestido* (m.), 10
 dress, to, *vestirse*, 33
 dressmaker, *costurera* (f.), 39
 drink, to, *beber*, 14
 drop, *gota* (f.), 21
 drunk, *borracho*, 48
 dry, *seco*, 21
 dust, *polvo*, 21
 duty, *deber*, 28 ; *encargo*, 44
 dwell, to, *morar*, 51

E.

each, *cada*, 19
 early, *temprano*, 15
 earth, *tierra* (f.), 36
 ease, *facilidad* (f.), 22
 easily, *fácilmente*, 38
 eat, to, *comer*, 11
 eccentricity, *manía* (f.), 39
 educate, to, *educar*, 37
 education, *educación* (f.), 26

effect, *efecto* (m.), *consecuencia* (f.), 40
 effect, to, *efectuar*, 26
 either (neg.), *tampoco*, 16
 elect, to, *elegir* *, 33
 elegance, *elegancia* (f.), 56
 elevate, to, *elevar*, 26
 employee, *empleado* (m.), 40
 empty, *vacío*, 39
 end, *fin* (m.), 6 ; *cabo* (m.), 47
 end, to, *acabar*, 5
 England, *Inglatera*, 12
 English, *inglés*, 5
 enjoy, to, *disfrutar*, 21
 enough, *bastante*, 6, 13
 enter, to, *entrar en*, 11
 envelope, *sobre*, *sobrescrito*, 35
 epoch, *época* (f.), 21
 error, *equivocación* (f.), 17
 escape, to, *escapar*, 27
 event, *acontecimiento* (m.), 13 ; *suceso* (m.), 58
 everybody, *todo el mundo*, 21
 exaggerate, to, *exagerar*, 56
 exact, *conforme*, 20
 examination, *examen* (m.), 48
 examine, to, *examinar*, 15
 except, *salvo*, 40
 except, to, *exceptuar*, 31
 excuse, *excusa* (f.), 12
 excuse, to, *excusar*, 26 ; *disculpar*, 17 ; *dispensar*, 56.
 exercise, *ejercicio* (m.), 11.
 expect, to, *esperar*, 11
 expense, *gasto* (m.), 27
 explain, to, *exponer* *, 27
 explanation, *explicación* (f.), 31
 extend, to, *extender*, 42
 extinguish, to, *apagar*, 9
 extraordinary, *extraordinario*, 15
 ever, *jamás*, 32
 eye, *ojo* (m.), 61

F.

face (surface), *faz* (f.), 42
 face, to, *hacer* * *frente*, 28
 facility, *facilidad* (f.), 12
 factory, *fábrica* (f.), 17
 fail, to, *dejar de*, 24
 fall, to, *caer* *, 13
 fall, to, to let fall, *dejar caer*, 22

false, *falso*, 44
 famed, *afamado*, 36
 family, *familia* (f.), 41
 fan, *abanico* (m.), 17
 fancy, to, *antojar*, 45
 far, *lejos*, 39
 father, *padre* (m.), 1
 favour, *favor*, 12
 favour, to do the, *hacer * el favor*, 11
 fear, *miedo* (m.), 19
 fear, to, *temer*, 23
 feast, *fiesta* (f.), 21
 feel, to, *sentir **, 14
 felicitation, *felicitación* (f.), 32
 felt, *fieltro* (m.), 14
 fight, to, *pelear*, 36
 find, to, *encontrar **, 16; *hallar*, 5
 fine, *fino*, 17; *hermoso*, 7
 finish, to, *acabar*, 5; *concluir*, 27
 fire, *lumbre* (f.), 15; *incendio* (m.), 60
 firm, *firme*, 27
 fish, *pescado* (m.), 6
 fit, to, *sentarle*, 24, 32
 flat, *chato*, 21
 flat (of house), *piso*, 29
 floor (flight), *piso*, 29
 flower, *flor* (f.), 16
 fly-wheel, *volante* (m.), 40
 fold, to, *plegar **, 29
 follow, to, *seguir **, 57
 following, *siguiente*, 25
 food, *alimento* (m.), 26
 foot, *pie* (m.), 6
 footpath, *acera* (f.), 53
 for, *para*, 6; *por*, 14, 36
 forbidden, *vedado*, 37
 foreigner, *estrangeiro* (m.), 16
 forget, to, *olvidar*, 6
 fork, *tenedor* (m.), 22
 form, to, *formar*, 30
 former, the, *aquel*, 18
 fortnight, *quincena* (f.), *quince días*, 22
 frankly, *francamente*, 14
 free, *libre*, 39
 freeze, to, *helar **, 21
 Friday, *viernes*, 15
 friend, *amigo*, 7
 friendship, *amistad* (f.), 20
 frighten, to, *asustar*, 37
 from, *de*, *desde*, 1

fulfil, to, *cumplir*, 32
 fun, to make fun of, *burlarse de*, 23
 funds, *fondos* (m.), 20

G.

gain, to, *ganar*, 5
 gallery, *galeria* (f.), 15
 garden, *jardín* (m.), 2
 gas, *gas* (m.), 7
 gender, *género* (m.), 14
 generally, { *generalmente*, 21
 por lo general, 21
 generosity, *generosidad* (f.), 47
 gentleman, *caballero* (m.), 18
 get, to, { *lograr*, 44
 *conseguir **, 27, 29
 get, to—done, *hacer hacer **, 24
 get, to—up, *levantarse*, 21
 give, to, *dar **, 9, 15
 give, to give back, *devolver **, 22
 girl, *nina*, 3; *muchacha* (f.), 18
 glass, *vaso* (m.), 22
 glove, *guante* (m.), 8
 God, *Dios*, 25
 go, to, *ir*, 13; (trains) *andar **, 39
 go, to (movement), *andar **, 31
 go near, to, *acercarse*, 23
 go away, to, *marcharse*, 23; *irse **, 41
 go to bed, to, *acostarse **, 21
 go out, to, *salir **, 16
 go forward, to, *pasar adelante*, 45
 good, *bueno*, 1
 goodness, *bondad* (f.), 22
 goods, *géneros* (m.), 14; *mercancías* (f.), 12
 gown, *bata* (f.), 37
 grammar, *gramática* (f.), 3
 grandfather, *abuelo* (m.), 27
 granted, *concedido*, 36
 gratis, *de balde*, 27
 great, *grande*, 3
 green, *verde*, 7
 ground, *suelo* (m.), 53
 guest, *huésped* (m.) and (f.), 31

H.

hail, to, *granizar*, 21
 hair, *pelo* (m.), 42

ham, *jamón* (m.), 13
 hand, *mano* (f.), 3
 handkerchief, *pañuelo* (m.), 6
 handle, *asa* (f.), 55
 happen, to, *suceder*, 15, *acontecer* *, 22
 happy, *feliz*, 9
 happiness, *felicidad* (f.), 37
 harm, *daño* (m.), 37
 hasten, to (to push), *activar*, 23
 hat, *sombrero* (m.), 1
 hate, *odio* (m.), 52
 have, to, *haber* *, *tener* *, 3
 have, to—to, *haber* * *de*, 19; *tener* *
que, 19
 have, to—just, *acabar de*, 16
 headache, *dolor de cabeza*, 23
 health, *salud* (f.), 31
 hear, to, *oir* *, 40
 heart, *corazón* (m.), 26
 heat, *calor* (m.), 21
 heed, to, *hacer* * *caso*, 23
 help, *ayuda* (f.), 52
 help, to, *ayudar*, 9
 helper, *ayudante* (m.), 19
 hen, *gallina* (f.), 34
 her (his), *su—de*, 2
 here, *aquí*, 2
 herself, *se*, 12; *ella misma*, 41
 hide, to, *esconder*, 13
 high, *alto*, 1; *elevado*, 27
 himself, *él mismo*, 41; *se*, 12
 hire, to, *alquilar*, 36
 his (her), *su—de*, 2
 hoarse, *ronco*, 23
 hold, to, *caber* *, 31
 holiday, *vacación* (f.), 15; *fiesta* (f.),
21
 home, at, *en casa*, 11, 16
 honour, *honra* (f.); *honor* (m.), 32
 honourable, *honrado*, 28; *honroso*,
26
 hook, *gancho* (m.), 32
 hope, *esperanza* (f.), 31
 hope, to, *esperar*, 11
 horse, *caballo*, 17
 hotel, *hotel* (m.), *fonda* (f.), 7
 hour, *hora* (f.), 5
 house, *casa* (f.), 2
 how, *como*, 2, 3; *qué*, 21; *qué tal*,
23; *cudn*, 49
 however, *por más—que*, 25
 how much, *cuanto*, 14

human, *humano*, 31
 humble, *humilde*, 26
 humour, *humor* (m.), 33
 hunger, *hambre* (f.), 19
 hurriedly, *de prisa*, 21
 hurt, to, *dañar*, 41
 husband, *marido* (m.), 26
 hypocrite, *hipócrita* (m.), 52

I.

idiom, *idiotismo* (m.), 22
 if, *si*, 10
 ill, *enfermo*, 2; *malo*, 7
 ill-treat, to, *maltratar*, 37
 image, *imagen* (f.), 28
 immediately, *en seguida*, 11
 immense, *inmenso*, 39
 import, to (to matter), *importar*, 22
 importance, *importancia* (f.), 15
 important, *importante*, 20
 impossible, *imposible*, 16
 in, *en*, 2
 inconvenience, *la incomodidad* (f.),
41
 increase, to, *acrecentar* *, 29
 indicate, to, *indicar*, 24
 industry, *industria* (f.), 31
 injure, to, *hacer* * *daño*, 29
 ink, *tinta* (f.), 1
 inkstand, *tintero* (m.), 3
 inn (hotel), *fonda* (f.), 7
 insolence, *insolencia* (f.), 47
 insipid, *soso*, 39
 insist, *empeñarse*, 31
 instant, *instante*, 22
 instead of, *en vez de*, 15; *en lugar de*,
24
 instructed, *instruido*, 37.
 instruction, *instrucción* (f.), 24
 insupportable, *insopportable*, 21
 intend, to, *tener* * *la intención* (f.),
13
 intention, *intención* (f.), 13
 interesting, *interesante*, 5
 interior, *interior*, 24
 interrupt, *interrumpir*, 42
 invite, to, *convidar*, 37
 invoice, *factura* (f.), 12
 invoice, to, *facturar*, 38
 it, *el*, *la*, 1

J.

joke, *chanza* (f.), 52
 journey, *viaje* (m.), 6
 joy, *gozo* (m.), 57
 joyous, *alegre*, 7
 judge, to, *juzgar*, 26
 judgment, *juicio* (m.), 24; *dictamen* (m.), 37
 just, to have, *acabar de*, 16

L.

lace, *encaje* (m.), 8
 lack, to, *carecer* *, 47
 lading, bill of, *conocimiento*, 47
 lame, *cojo*, 39
 language, *lengua* (f.), 20; *lenguage* (m.), 24
 large, *grande*, 3
 larger, *mayor*, 18
 largest, *el, la, mayor*, 18
 last, to, *durar*, 26
 late, *tarde*, 18
 latter, the, *este*, 18
 laugh, to—at, *reirse* * *de*, 33
 lay aside, to, *prescindir*, 37
 lazy, *perezoso*, 23
 learn, to, *aprender*, 10
 learned, *docto*, 36; *erudito*, 28; *instruido*, 37
 leather, *cuero* (m.), 27
 least, *el, la, menor*, 18
 leave, to, *dejar*, 15
 left, *izquierdo*, 22
 lend, to, *prestar*, 14
 less, lesser, *menos*, 18
 lesson, *lección* (f.), 4
 let, to, *dejar*, 15; (to hire), *alquilar*, 36

letter, *carta* (f.), 3
 letter-box, *buzón* (m.), 6
 liberty, *libertad* (f.), 22
 library, *biblioteca* (f.), 14
 lie, to, *mentir* *, 28
 lie, *mentira* (f.), 36
 lie down, to, *acostarse* *, 21
 life, *vida*, 27
 light (adj.), *ligero*, 31
 light, to, *encender* *, 15
 light, *luz* (f.), 9

like, *como*, 13
 like, to, *gustarle*, 10
 like, should, *quisiera*, 16
 lime, *cal* (f.), 55
 literature, *literatura* (f.), 39
 little, *pequeño*, 7, 18
 little, *poco*, 5
 live, to, *vivir*, 13
 logic, *lógica* (f.), 54
 long, *largo*, 4
 look at, to, *mirar*, 21
 look for, to, *buscar*, 6
 loosen, *soltar* *, 28
 loss, *pérdida* (f.), 20
 love, *amor*, 37
 love, to, *querer*, *amar*, 23
 love, to fall in, *enamorarse de*, 47
 lower, to, *bajar*, 19
 luggage, *equipaje* (m.), 9
 lunch, *almuerzo* (m.), 6
 lunch, to, *almorzar*, 12

M.

machine, *máquina* (f.), 40
 mad, *loco*, 24
 magnificent, *magnífico*, 21
 make, to, *fabricar*, 22
 maker, *fabricante* (m.), 11
 malevolence, *malevolencia* (f.), 31
 man, *hombre* (m.), 1
 manage, to, *manejar*, 51
 manager, *gerente* (m.), 16
 manner, *modo* (m.), 22; *manera* (f.), 25
 manufacture, to, *fabricar*, 22
 manufacturer, *fabricante* (m.), 11
 market, *mercado* (m.), 11
 married, to get, *casarse*, 22
 marvel, *maravilla* (f.), 35
 mask, *carreta* (f.), 42
 match, *fósforo* (m.), 20
 match, wax, *cerilla* (f.)
 matter, *asunto* (f.), 17
 matter, to, *importar*, 22
 mattress, *colchón* (m.), 45
 mature, to, *madurar*, 36
 maturely, *maduramente*, 48
 may, to (to be able), *poder* *, 14
 meal, *comida* (f.), 4

mean, to, *querir* * *dicir*, 23 ; *significar*, 47
meaning, *sentido* (m.), 49
measure, to, *medir* *, 33
meat, *carne* (f.), 6
mediate, *mediar*, 31
meddle, *entremeterse*, 15
meet, to, *encontrar* *, 16
meeting, *reunión* (f.), 60
memory, *memoria* (f.), 36
mend, *reparar*, *componer* *, 24
mention, *mención*, 14
mercantile, *mercantil*, 18
merchant, *comerciante* (m.), 13
merit, to, *merecer* *, 14
merry, *alegre*, 7
middle, *medio* *, 41
milk, *leche* (f.), 5
milliner, *modista* (f.), 8
mind, *ánimo* (m.), 58
mind, to, *tener cuidado de*, 29
mine, *mios*, *as*, 17
mischance, *contratiempo* (m.), 50
misfortune, *desgracia* (f.), 60
mishap, *contratiempo* (m.), 50
miss, to, *echar de menos*, 26
miss (young lady), *señorita* (f.), 19
misadventure, *desventura* (f.), 26
misery, *miseria* (f.), 37
mistake, *falta*, 8 ; *equivocación* (f.), 17
mistake, to make a } *equivocarse*, 12
mistaken, to be }
moment, *momento* (m.), 24
money, *dinero* (m.), 4
month, *mes* (m.), 14
more, *más*, 7
morning, *mañana* (f.), 11
most, the, *los más*, 24
mother, *madre* (f.), 2
motive, *motivo* (m.), 37
mountain, *monte* (m.), 31
move, to, *move* *, 30
much, *mucho*, 6
much, very, *muchísimo*, 11
much, as, *tan como*, 18
much, how, *cuánto*, 16
much, too, *demasiado*, 24
musician, *músico* (m.), 36
must, to, *deber*, 19, 20
mutual, *mutuo*, 20
my, *mi*, *mis*, 2

N.

nail, *clavo* (m.), 26
named, to be, *llamarse*, 10
narrow, *estrecho*, *angosto*, 22
nation, *nación* (f.), 1
national, *nacional*, 4
nature, *naturaleza* (f.), 54
naughty, *travieso*, 39
nausea, *asco* (m.), 43
near, *cerca de*, 6 ; *junto a*, 15
neck, *cuello* (m.), 58
necessary, *necesario*, 5 ; *preciso*, 21
necessity, *necesidad* (f.), 33
need, to, *necesar*, 6
needed, to be, *hacer* * *falta*, 21
needle, *aguja* (f.), 63
neglect, *descuido* (m.), 26
neighbour, *vecino* (m.), 18
neither, *ni uno*, *ni otro*, 16
neither . . . nor, *ni . . . ni*, 16
neither, *tampoco*, 16
net, *red* (f.), 30
never, *jamás*, *nunca*, 32
nevertheless, *sin embargo*, 27
new, *nuevo*, 10
news, *noticias* (f.), 6
newspaper, *periódico* (m.), 1
next, *próximo*
night, *noche* (f.), 16
night, last, *anoche*, 21
nobody, *nadie*, 13
noise, *ruido* (m.), 22
none, *ninguno*, 3
nonsense, *disparate* (m.), 42
nor . . . either, *ni . . . tampoco*, 16
north, *norte* (m.), 8
nose, *nariz* (f.), 21
nothing, *nada*, 12
notice, to, *reparar*, 22 ; *advertir* *, 51
notice, to take, *hacer* * *caso*, 23
now, *ahora*, 11 ; *actualmente*, 13
now and then, *de cuando en cuando*, 42
nun, *monja* (f.), 39

O.

obey, to, *obedecer* *, 33
object, *objeto* (m.), 60

objection, *objeción* (f.), 22 ; *inconveniente* (m.), 22
 obligation, *obligación* (f.), 32
 oblige, to, *obligar*, 26
 obscure, *oscuro*, 17
 obtain, to, *obtener* *, 27 ; *lograr*, 44
 occasion, *ocasión* (f.), 22
 occupied, *ocupado*, 7
 occur, *ocurrir*, 15
 of, *de*, 1
 offend, *ofender*, 20
 offer, *oferta* (f.), 20
 offer, to, *ofrecer* *, 23
 office, *despacho* (m.) 3 ; *oficina* (f.), 6 :
 escritorio (m.), 35
 officer, *oficial* (m.), 19
 often, *a menudo*, *muchas veces*, 18
 old, *viejo*, 16 ; *antiguo*, 22
 old man, *anciano* (m.), 14
 on, *sobre*, 2
 once, *una vez* (f.), 13
 once, at, *en seguida*, 11
 one, *uno*, 4
 one (impers.), *se*
 only, *único*, 25, *sólo*, *solamente*
 open, to, *abrir*, 19
 opera, *ópera* (f.), 22
 operation, *operación* (f.), 11
 opponent, *contrincante* (m.), 52
 or, *o*, 7
 order, to, *mandar*, 12 ; *ordenar*, 50
 order, out of, *descompuesto*, 35
 ordinary, *ordinario*, 20
 organist, *organista* (m.), 32
 original, *original* (m.), 5
 ostentation, *ostentación* (f.), 26
 other, *otro*, 2
 otherwise, *de otro modo*, 21
 our, *nuestro*, 3
 ought to, *deber*, 19, 20
 outskirts (town), *arabal* (m.), 22
 outside, *afuera* (f.), 47 ; *fuera*, 52
 overcoat, *gabán* (m.), 5
 own, *propio*, 17

P.

package, *fardo* (m.), 20
 packet, *paquete* (m.), 9
 pain, *pena* (f.), 14
 pain, to, *doler* *, 23

painting, *pintura* (f.), 15
 pair, *par* (m.), 13 ; *pareja* (f.), 50
 palace, *palacio* (m.), 9
 pants, *calzoncillos* (m.), 8
 paper, *papel* (m.), 3
 paper, writing, *papel para escribir*.
 14
 paper, blotting, *papel secante*, 22
 parcel, to, *empaquetar*, 12
 parents, *padres* (m.), 3
 park, *parque* (m.), 2
 part, *parte* (f.), 24
 particulars, *pormenores* (m.), 14
 party, *tertulia* (f.), 38
 pass, to, *pasar*, 15
 past, *pasado*, 19
 patience, *paciencia* (f.), 32
 pay, to, *pagar*, 10
 peace, *paz* (f.), 26
 peach, *melocotón* (m.), 21
 pear, *pera* (f.), 36
 pen, *pluma* (f.), 1
 pencil, *lápiz* (m.), 1
 people, *gente* (f.), 21
 perchance, *acaso*, 25
 perfect, *perfecto*, 31
 perfect, to, *perfeccionar*, 38
 perfectly, *perfectamente*, 21
 perform, to, *cumplir*, 32
 period, *rato* (m.), 40
 permission, *permiso* (m.), 15
 permit, to, *permitir*, 15
 person, *persona* (f.), 14
 persuade, to, *persuadir*, 33
 perverse, *perverso*, 28
 photo, *fotografía* (f.), 28
 phrase, *frase* (f.), 24
 pianist, *pianista* (m.), 4
 piece, *pieza* (f.), 2 ; *pedazo*, (m.), 21
 pick up, to, *recoger*, 16
 pig, *cerdo* (m.), 54
 pill, *pildora* (f.), 46
 pilfer, *sistar*, 47
 pin, *alfiler* (m.), 17
 pity, *lástima* (f.), 21
 place, *sitio* (m.) 16
 place, to, *asentar* *, 54
 plain, to be, *constar*, 28
 plain, *llano*, 44
 platform (of station), *andén* (m.), 15
 play, to, *jugar* *, 5
 play, to (instrument), *tocar*, 36

please, to, *gustarle*, 10 ; *complacer* *,
á, 14 ; *servirse* *, 24 ; *agradecer* *,
 20
 pleasure, *gusto* (m.), 6 ; *placer* (m.),
 16
 pledge, to, *empeñar*, 31
 plenty (to have), *sobrar*, 28
 pocket, *bolsillo* (m.), 3
 point, *punto* (m.), 38
 point out, to, *señalar*, 47
 police, *policía* (f.), 27
 poor, *pobre*, 8
 portrait, *retrato* (m.), 57
 possess, to, *poseer*, 28
 possession, *posesión* (f.), 28
 possible, *possible*, 29
 possible, soon as, *cuanto antes*, 15,
 24 ; *lo antes posible*, 22
 post, *correo*, 6 ; *puesto*, 40
 post, to, *echar al correo*, 6
 postage, *porte* (m.), 12
 postal, *postal*, 14
 postcard, *tarjeta postal* (f.), 14
 postman, *cartero* (m.), 6
 post office, *oficina de correos* (f.), 6
 pound, *libra* (f.), 36
 power, *poder* (m.), 14
 powerful, *poderoso*, 31
 praise, *alabanza* (f.), 47
 praise, to, *alabar*, 37
 pray, to, *rogar* *, 24
 prayer, *oración* (f.), 26
 preacher, *predicador* (m.), 21
 precisely, *precisamente*, 44
 prefer, to, *preferir* *, 13
 preposition, *preposición*, 22
 present, to, *presentar*, 21
 present, to be, *asistir*, 24
 present, at, *actualmente*, 13
 presently, *luego*, 51
 press, to, *apurar*, 27
 pretend, to, *impedir* *, 23
 price, *precio* (m.), 12
 prick, *agujón* (m.), 26
 pride, *soberbia* (f.), 32
 prince, *príncipe* (m.), 4
 principal, *principal* (m.), 15
 prisoner, *preso* (m.), 40
 prize, *premio* (m.), 27
 professor, *profesor* (m.), 27
 progress, *progreso* (m.), 23
 prohibit, *prohibir*, 15

project, *proyectar*, 48
 promise, *promesa* (f.), 13
 pronounce, *pronunciar*, 10
 proof, *prueba* (f.), 41
 propose, to, *proponer* *, 44
 proposition, *propósito*, 19
 protect, to, *proteger*, 15
 proverb, *refrán* (m.) 20 ; *proverbio*
 (m.), 22
 prudent, *prudente*, 13
 punish, to, *castigar*, 37
 pupil, *discípulo* (m.), 18
 pull up, to, *arrancar*, 52
 purpose, on, *á propósito*, 19
 purse, *bolsa* (f.), 25
 push on, to, *activar*, 23
 put, to, *poner* * 15 ; *meter*, 41
 put out, to, *apagar*, 9
 put up with, to, *aguantar*, 26

Q.

quality, *clase* (f.), 40 ; *calidad* (f.),
 23
 quarrel, *riña* (f.), 31
 quarter (3 months), *trimestre* (m.), 22
 queen, *reina* (f.), 9
 question, *cuestión* (f.), 52
 quick, *despejado*, 37

R.

railway, *ferro-carril* (m.), 5
 rain, *lluvia* (f.), 21
 rain, to, *lover* *, 21
 rainy, *lluvioso*, 28
 rarely, *rara vez*, 51
 rather, *un poco, bastante*, 5, 13
 rather, *más bien que*, 18
 read, to, *leer*, 18
 ready, *listo*, 3
 reason, *razón* (f.), 19
 receive, *recibir*, 15
 receive kindly, *acoger*, 51 ; *agasajar*,
 24
 reciprocal, *recíproco*, 41
 reckon on, to, *contar* * *con*, 52
 recommend, to, *recomendar*, 29
 recompense, *recompensar*, 37
 red, *encarnado, rojo*, 7

re-establish, to (health), *restablecer* *, 23
 rent, to, *alquilar*, 36
 refer, to, *referirse* *, 13
 regard, to (to look at), *mirar*, 21
 regularly, *regularmente*, 22
 reject, to, *rechazar*, 20
 relate, to, *relatar*, 28 ; *contar* *, 30
 relation, *pariente* (m.), 17
 remain, to, *quedarse*, 19 ; *quedarse*, 22
 remainder, *lo demás*, 36
 remedy, *remedio* (m.), 60
 remember, to, *acordarse* * *de*, 30
 remind, to, *recordar* *, 20
 remorse, *remordimiento*, 39
 renew, to, *renovar* *, 49
 repair, to, *reparar*, 22 ; *componer* *, 40
 repeat, to, *repetir* *, 33
 repent, to, *arrepentirse* *, 29
 reply, *respuesta* (f.), 3 ; *contestación* (f.), 5
 reply, to, *contestar*, 24 ; *responder*, 27
 report, *informe* (m.), 13 ; *parte*, 36
 resignation, *resignación* (f.), 40
 resist, to, *resistir*, 26
 resolution, *resolución* (f.), 28
 respect, *respeto* (m.), 44
 respect, to, *respetar*, 26
 rest, *lo demás*, 36 ; *restante*, 44
 rest, to, *descansar*, 11
 result, *resultado* (m.), 11
 result (success), *éxito* (m.), 17
 result, to, *resultar*, 15
 retard, to, *atrasar*, 9
 return, *regreso* (m.), 22
 return, to, *regresar*, 11 ; *volver* *, 21
 return, to (give back), *devolver* *, 22
 revenge, *venganza* (f.), 31
 rich, *rico*, 4
 right, *derecho*, 22 ; *recto*, 39
 right (reason), *razón* (f.), 19
 right, by, *rigurosamente*, 27
 rise, to, *levantarse*, 21
 risk, *riesgo* (m.), 41
 risk, to, *arriesgarse*, 42
 river, *rio* (m.), 23
 road, *camino* (m.), 24
 room, *cuarto* (m.), 2 ; *habitación* (f.) ; *aposento* (m.), 4?

room, dining, *comedor* (m.), 2
 room, to give, *dar* * *cabida*, 31
 royal, *real*, 19
 rule, *regla* (f.), 62
 rustic, *rústico*, 56

S.

sacred, *sagrado*, 49
 sacrifice, *sacrificio* (m.), 27
 sad, *triste*, 2
 safe, *seguro*, 16 ; *caja fuerte* (f.), 20
 sailor, *marinero* (m.), 47
 salute, to, *saludar*, 14
 sample, *muestra* (f.), 8
 saucer, *platillo* (m.), 53
 say, to, *decir* *, 14
 school, *escuela* (f.), 4
 scruple, *escripción* (m.), 40
 seamstress, *costurera* (f.), 39
 season (time), *temporada* (f.), 50
 seat, *asiento* (m.), 21
 see, to, *ver*, 14, 16
 seek, to, *buscar*, 6
 seem, to, *parecer* *, 16
 seen, *visto*, 5
 select, to, *escojer*, 15
 sell, to, *vender*, 13
 send, to, *enviar*, 9 ; *mandar*, 12
 sentence, *sentencia*, 30
 sermon, *sermón* (m.), 21
 servant, *criado* (m.), 10
 service, *servicio* (m.), 26
 serve, to, *servir* *, 25
 serviette, *servilleta* (f.), 24
 several, *varios*, 11
 severe, *severo*, 4
 severity, *severidad* (f.), 46
 sew, to, *coser*, 41
 shadow, *sombra* (f.), 39
 shame, to, *avergonzar* *, 42
 sharp, *agudo*, 42
 she, *ella*, 1
 shelter, to, *resguardar*, 55
 shirt, *camisa* (f.), 8
 shirt, under, *camiseta* (f.), 8
 shilling, *chelin* (m.), 14
 shoe, *zapato* (m.), 8
 shop, *tienda* (f.), 2
 short, *corto*, 26

shortness, *cortedad* (f.), 38
 shoulder, *hombro* (f.), 55
 shout, to, *gritar*, 11
 show, to, *mostrar* *, 10
 shut, to, *cerrar* *, 11
 sick, *enfermo*, 2
 sickly, *enfermizo*, 4
 side, *lado* (m.), 20
 sidewise, *de soslayo*, 47
 sigh, to, *suspirar*, 26
 sign, *seña* (f.), 26
 sign, to, *firmar*, 38
 silent, to be, *callar*, 23
 silk, *seda* (f.), 30
 simple, *sencillo*, 48
 simplicity, *simpleza* (f.), 48
 sin, *pecado* (m.), 51
 since, *desde*, 19
 sister, *hermana* (f.), 2
 sit, to, *sentarse* *, 12
 sitting-room, *gabinete* (m.), 35
 situation, *colocación* (f.), 26
 sketch, *dibujo* (m.), 15
 sketch, to, *dibujar*, 11
 sky, *cielo* (m.), 21
 sleep, to, *dormir* *, 27
 slip, to, *deslizar*, 52
 small, *chico*, 19 ; *pequeño*, 7
 smart (fine), *guapo*, 21
 smart (quick), *despejado*, 37
 snow, *nieve* (f.), 21
 soap, *jabón* (m.), 21
 socks, *calcetines* (m.), 8
 soldier, *soldado* (m.), 18
 some, *alguno*, 3
 somebody, *alguien*, 13
 something, *algo*, 6
 sometimes, *a veces*, 22
 son, *hijo*, 18
 soon, *luego, pronto*, 14
 sooner, *más pronto*, 18
 sorrowful, *afligido*, 25
 sorry, to be, *sentirlo* *, 29
 soul, *alma* (f.), 15
 sound, *sonido* (m.), 15
 Spain, *España*, 3
 Spanish, *español*, 3
 speak, to, *hablar*, 3
 speech, *discurso* (m.), 58
 spend, to, *gastar*, 5
 spend time, to, *pasar*, 19
 spoil, to, *echar á perder*, 27

spoon, *cuchara* (f.), 22
 spurn, to, *rechazar*, 20
 squeeze, to, *apretar* *, 12
 stained, *manchado*, 16
 staircase, *escalera* (f.), 29
 stamp, *sello* (m.), 6
 start, to, *salir* *, 16
 state, *estado*, 4
 station, *estación* (f.), 1, 5
 steam, *vapor* (m.), 16
 steamer, *vapor* (m.), 16
 stick, *palo* (m.), 50
 stifling, *sofocante*, 21
 stockings, *medias* (f.), 8
 stone (flag), *losa* (f.), 53
 stop, to, *parar*, 7
 storm, *tempestad* (f.), 32
 strange, *extraño*, 27
 stranger, *forastero* (m.), 36
 straw, *paja* (f.), 63
 street, *calle* (f.), 2
 strike, *huelga* (f.), 23
 stripe, *lista* (f.), *raya* (f.), 37
 struggle, *lucha* (f.), 39
 student, *estudiante* (m.), 18
 study, to, *estudiar*, 5
 stumble, to, *tropezar* *, 29
 subjunctive, *subjuntivo*, 22
 submit, to, *someter*, 13
 success, *éxito* (m.), 17
 succour, to, *socorrer*, 27
 suddenly, *de súbito*, 26 ; *de repente*, 56
 suffice, to, *bastar*, 19
 sugar, *azúcar* (m.), 4
 suit, *traje* (m.), 10
 suit (law), *proceso* (m.), 26
 suitable, *conveniente*, 24
 sun, *sol* (m.), 21
 Sunday, *domingo* (m.), 15
 sure, *seguro*, 16
 superior, *jefe* (m.), 20
 suppose, to, *suponer* *, 39
 supposed (p.p.), *supuesto*, 36
 support, to, *soportar*, 40
 surprise, to, *sorprender*, 41
 surprised, to be, *admirarse*, 27
 sustain, to, *sustentar*, 50 ; *sostenerse* *, 58
 swallow, to, *tragar*, 46
 swim, to, *nadar*, 16
 system, *sistema* (m.), 27

T.

table, mesa (f.), 2
 tailor, sastre (m.), 10
 take, to, tomar, 9
 take away, to, quitar, 47
 take care, to, cuidar, 35
 take notice, to, hacer * caso, 23
 take off, to, quitarse, 24
 tall, alto, 1
 taste, gusto (m.), 6
 taste, to, saber, 34
 teach, to, enseñar, 10
 teacher, maestro (m.), 7 ; profesor, 27
 tear, lágrima (f.), 42
 temper, to, templar, 46
 tenderness, ternura (f.), 41
 term, plazo (m.), 26
 than, que, de, 18
 thank, dar gracias, agradecer *, 20
 thanks, gracias (f.), 15
 that, el de, 20 ; la de, 20 ; que, 12 ;
 aquel, 18 ; aquella, 7 ; ese, esa, 2
 the, el, la, 1, 4
 theatre, teatro (m.), 3
 then, entonces, 24
 there, allá, allí, 7
 there to be, haber *, 3, 21
 thief, ladrón (m.), 22
 thin, delgado, 44
 thing, cosa (f.), 15
 think, to, pensar *, 14
 think (meaning "to believe"), creer,
 12, 20
 thirst, sed (f.), 19
 this, este, etc., 1
 thread, hilo (m.), 48
 threat, amenaza (f.), 32
 throw, to, echar, 6 ; arrojar, 23
 thunder, to, tronar *, 21
 ticket, billete (m.), 9
 time, tiempo (m.), 11 ; hora (f.), 5 ;
 época (f.), 21
 time-table, orario (m.) de trenes, 15
 tire, to, cansar, 2
 to, á, 4 ; in order to, para, 6
 toast, tostada (f.), 21
 tobacco, tabaco (m.), 17
 to-day, hoy, 6
 to-morrow, mañana, 11
 tongue, lengua (f.), 20
 too, demasiado, 24

tooth (molar), muela (f.), 23
 toothache, dolor de muelas (m.), 12
 touch, to, tocar, 36
 towards, hacia, para con
 towel, toalla (f.), 21
 town, ciudad (f.), 3
 townhall, municipalidad (f.), ayunta-
 miento (m.), 18
 trade, home, comercio interior, 24
 train, tren (m.), 9
 transaction, operación (f.), 11
 translate, to, traducir, 16
 translation, traducción (f.), 17
 travel, to, viajar, 14
 trifles, pelillos, 48
 triumph, triunfo (m.), 39
 trouble, pena (f.), 14
 trouble, to, molestar, 22
 true, verdadero, 44
 trunk, baul (m.), 29
 truth, verdad (f.), 14
 try, to, probar *, 16 ; procurar, 47
 try for, to, pretend, 56
 turn, to, girar, 57
 turn out, to (to result), salir *, 17
 twine, cuerda (f.), 44

U.

ugly, feo, 8
 umbrella, paraguas (m.), 8
 unbearable, insuportable, 21 ; in-
 aguantable, 28
 unfeeling, insensible, 36
 underneath, debajo de, 8
 understand, to, entender *, 13 ; com-
 prender, 25
 unexpected, imprevisto, 49
 unfortunate, desgraciado, 33
 unfortunately, por desgracia, 22
 unhappy, infeliz, 27
 unnecessary, excusado, 36
 unpleasant, desapacible, 21
 until, hasta, 12
 upon, sobre, 2
 useful, útil, 7

V.

vacation, vacación (f.), 15
 vanity, vanidad (f.), 31

variable, *variable*, 21
 vary, to, *variar*, 28
 verb, *verbo* (m.), 16
 verify, to, *verificar*, 45
 very, *muy*, 1
 vilify, *envilecer* *, 41
 village, *aldea*, 13
 violate, *violar*, 45
 visit, *visitar*, 15
 voice, *voz* (f.), 23

W.

wait, to, *esperar*, 28
 wait for, to, *aguardar*, 23
 waiter, *mozo* (m.), 19
 walk, to, *andar* *, 31
 war, *guerra* (f.), 25
 warehouse, *almacén* (m.), 13
 warehouse, to, *almacenar*, 13
 warm, *caliente*, 32
 warmth, *calor* (m.), 21
 warn, *advertir* *, 51
 washbowl, *jofaina* (f.), 43
 washing, *lavado* (m.), 24
 washerwoman, *lavandera* (f.), 24
 water, *agua* (f.), 5
 water-carrier, *aguador* (m.), 11
 watch, *reloj* (m.), 7
 watch, to, *vigilar*, 27
 weakness, *debilidad* (f.), 35 ; *flaqueza* (f.), 28
 weary, to be, *aburrirse*, 18 ; *fastidiarse*, 59
 weather, *tiempo* (m.), 11
 wedding, *boda* (f.), 39
 week, *semana* (f.), 13 ; *ocho días*, 22
 weep, to, *llorar*, 20
 weigh, to, *pesar*, 51
 weight, *peso*, 18
 welcome, to, *acoger*, 51
 well, *bien*, 2 ; *pues*, 12
 what (interrog.), *qué*, 1
 what (before verb), *lo que*, 20
 whatever, *cualquiera*, 26
 wheel, *rueda* (f.), 57
 when, *cuando*, 9
 where, *dónde*, 2, 11
 which, *cual*, 8
 white, *blanco*, 17

who, whom, *quien*, 2
 whose, *de quien*, *cuyo*, 17
 why, *porque*, 14
 wife, *esposa* (f.), 59
 will, *voluntad* (f.), 39
 will, to, *querer* *, 7, 12, 18
 will, free, *libre albedrio* (m.), 49
 willingly, *de buena gana* (f.), 15
 win, to, *ganar*, 5
 wind, *viento* (m.), 21
 window, *ventana* (f.), 19
 wine, *vino* (m.), 1
 wing, *ala* (f.), 50
 winter, *invierno* (m.), 19
 with, *con*, 2, 13
 within, *dentro de*, 3
 woman, *mujer* (f.), 8
 wont, to be, *soler* *, 15
 word, *palabra* (f.), 7
 word, to leave, *dejar dicho*, 48
 work, *trabajo* (m.), 5 ; *obra* (f.), 57
 work, to, *trabajar*, 18 ; *obrar*, 52 ;
funcionar, 55
 worse, *peor*, 18
 worth while, to be, *valer* * *la pena*,
 34
 worthy, *digno*, 28
 wrath, *ira* (f.), 31
 write, to, *escribir*, 11
 written, *escrito*, 4

Y.

yard, *patio* (m.), 22
 yawn, *bostezar*, 52
 year, *año* (m.), 19
 yes, *si*, 2
 yesterday, *ayer*, 9
 yesterday, day before, *anteayer*, 9
 yet, *todavía*, 4
 you, *usted*, 1
 young man,
 young woman, } *joven*, 5
 yours, *su-de*, *el-de*, *la-de*, 2
 youth, *juventud* (f.), 29

Z.

zeal, *celo* (m.), 37

INDEX.

(The numbers refer to the lessons.)

accentuation, page 2
accusative, 9, 10
adjectives, 7, 8
adverbs, 8, 51
ago, how translated, 21
article, 4
article after *ser*, 17
augmentations, 53
be, to ; *tener* instead of *estar*, 19
become, to, 30
but, when *pero*, when *sino*, 19
by, translated *por* and *de*, 14
can, could, 22
capitalization, page 3
colours, page 173
comparatives, 18
conjunction "that" not omitted, 20
construction, 63
cuando, referring to future, 27
dative, 9, 10
days of the week, page 172
dieresis, page 1
diminutives, 53
direct object, 9, 10
en, with present participle, 57
estar, 2, 4
,, with present participle, 6
,, with past participle, 7, 37
exclamatives, 21
gender, 6, 62
haber, 3
,, impersonal, 3, 21, 31
hacer instead of *estar*, 21
have, to, with past participle, 4
,, signifying obligation, 19
,, instead of "to be," 19
hours, page 172
how, exclamative, 21
idioms, 48

imperative, 8, 45
imperfect indicative, use of, 19
impersonal verb, 21, 27, 28
,, *se*, 12, 40, *et seq.*
,, when used, 19
indirect object, 9, 10
infinitive following preposition, 22
interrogatives, 34
know, to, how to translate, 16
le, *lo*, referring to noun commencing sentence, 57
lo, 14, 31, 44
may, might, 22
months, page 173
mucho instead of *muy*, 22
multiplicatives, page 172
negation, 3
nominative pronouns, 9
nouns, masculine and feminine, 6
,, to change English to Spanish,
26
numerals, page 170
objects, direct and indirect, 9, 10
passive voice, 6, 12, 27, 37, *et seq.*
past tenses, use of, 19
pero, *sino*, 19
persons and things personified govern
4, 12
plural, how to form, 6
por, *para*, 14, 36
possessive case, 1
prepositions govern infinitives, 22
prepositions, observations on, 35, 36
preterite, use of, 19
pronouns, dative and accusative, 9, 10
,, demonstrative, 20
,, disjunctive, 9
,, indefinite *lo*, 44
,, personal, 9

pronouns, possessive, 17
 ,, relative, 20, 33
 pronunciation, before Lesson 1
que requires subjunctive, 23
 ,, uses of, 49
 seasons, page 173
se, impersonal, 12
 ,, equals "to be," 22
 ,, reflective, 12, 22
se, si, uses of, 40, *et seq.*
 sentences commencing with objects,
 57
ser, 1
 ,, impersonal, 21, 23
 ,, examples, 4
 should, 26
 some, generally omitted, 3
 subjunctive, 23, *et seq.*
 superlatives, 18, 59
tener, used for "to be," 19
 tenses (see verbs)
 that, observations, 20
 verbs, conjugation of, page 173
 ,, defective, 22, 46
 ,, governing prepositions, 52

verbs, imperfect indicative, only three
 irregular, 14
 ,, impersonal, 21, 27, 28
 ,, irregular, 12, 14, 28
 ,, list of, page 194
 ,, passive voice, 37, *et seq.*
 ,, past participles, 3, 4, 7, 9, 37,
 58, 63
 ,, ,, how formed, 9, 13
 ,, ,, irregular, 14
 ,, ,, invariable with
 haber, 16, 58
 ,, past participles with *estar*, 63
 ,, peculiar, 47, 60
 ,, present participles, 10, 13
 ,, ,, with *estar*, 6
 ,, reflective, 12, 22, 43
 ,, subjunctive, how formed, 8, 12,
 13
 ,, subjunctive, use of, 23, 26
 ,, tenses, use of, 19
 ,, ,, sequence, 26
 ,, two or more together, 7
 ,, voice of, 37

LONGMANS' FRENCH COURSE.

Longmans' French Grammar. By T. H. BERTENSHAW, B.A., Mus. Bac.

Part I., up to and including Regu'ar Verbs and Vocabularies, etc. Cr. 8vo, 1s.

Key and Supplement to Part I. (for Teachers only), with Copious Notes and Illustrations, Examination Papers, etc., 2s. 9½d. net.

Part II., including Pronouns, Adverbs, Irregular Verbs, Subjunctive Mood, Infinitive and Participles, with Vocabularies, etc. Crown 8vo, 1s.

Key and Supplement to Part II. (for Teachers only), with Copious Notes and Illustrations, Examination Papers, etc., 2s. 9½d. net.

Longmans' Complete French Grammar. Being Parts I. and II. as above. Complete in 1 Vol. Crown 8vo, 2s.

Key and Supplement to Longmans' Complete French Grammar (for Teachers only), 5s. 4d. net.

Longmans' French Composition. By T. H. BERTENSHAW, B.A., Mus. Bac., and ELPHÈGE JANAU, Assistant French Master in Christ's Hospital, London, with Vocabulary and Index. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

A Key (for Teachers only), 5s. 2d. net.

FRENCH READING-BOOKS.

ELEMENTARY.

Longmans' Illustrated First French Reading-Book and Grammar. By J. BIDGOOD, B.Sc., and THOS. HARBOTTLE. With 55 Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 1s.

Longmans' Illustrated First Conversational French Reader. With Notes and Full Vocabularies. By T. H. BERTENSHAW, B.A., Mus. Bac. With 86 Illustrations (including 18 Views of the Public Buildings, etc., of Paris, and Plan of Paris, illustrating "Ma Première Visite à Par's"). Crown 8vo, 1s. 6d.

* * This Book is for the more advanced Pupils of the Elementary Stage, and the less advanced in the Intermediate Stage.

INTERMEDIATE.

Longmans' Illustrated Second French Reading-Book and Grammar. By JOHN BIDGOOD, B.Sc., and J. WATSON CAMPBELL. With 40 Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 2s.

Histoires d'Animaux. An Illustrated Reading-Book consisting of Stories of Animals from A. Dumas. Edited by T. H. BERTENSHAW, B.A., Mus. Bac. With 67 Illustrations by H. J. FORD and LANCELOT SPEED. Pupils' Edition, price 2s.; Teachers' Edition, price 2s. 6d.

Benjamine. By CHARLES DESLYS. Edited, with Grammatical and Explanatory Notes, and a Comprehensive Vocabulary, by F. JULIEN, Officier d'Académie (Univ. Gallic.), French Master of King Edward's Grammar School, Five Ways, Birmingham. Crown 8vo, 1s. 6d.

ADVANCED.

L'Aide de Camp Marbot. Selections from the Mémoires du Général Baron de Marbot. Edited, with Notes and Plans, by GRANVILLE SHARP, M.A., late Assistant Master at Marlborough College. Cr. 8vo, 2s. 6d.

Longmans' Elementary French Unseens. A series of Passages mainly from modern French Authors of suitable length and difficulty for the Oxford and Cambridge Junior Locals, the Queen's Scholarship, and other Exams. Edited by T. H. BERTENSHAW, B.A., Mus. Bac. Crown 8vo, 1s. 6d. Teachers' Edition, with additional Notes, etc. 2s.

Longmans' Advanced French Unseens. With Notes and Vocabulary. By T. H. BERTENSHAW, B.A., B.Mus. Pupils' Edition, crown 8vo, 2s. Teachers' Edition, with additional Notes. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

Text-Books for Mercantile Examinations.

Commercial Arithmetic. By FRANK L. GRANT, M.A., F.R.A.S., Master, Mathematical Department, High School of Glasgow, and ALEXANDER M. HILL, M.A., Master, Mathematical Department, High School of Glasgow. With Answers, 3s. 6d.

School and Examination Book-keeping. Being a Treatise on the Double-Entry System suitable for Schools, Self-taught Students, and for Public Examination Preparation; containing Questions and Numerous Exercises and Examination Papers with Outline Keys. By J. LOGAN, Lecturer in Book-keeping, Clark's Civil Service and Commercial College, London. 2s. 6d.

Longmans' Elementary Book-keeping. By A. NIXON, F.C.A., F.S.A.A. With Answers, 1s. 6d.; Without Answers, 1s.

Longmans' Advanced Book-keeping. By A. NIXON, F.C.A. 3s. 6d.

Longmans' Studies and Questions in Book-keeping and Advanced Accounts (Banking and Exchange). With Notes and Answers and Recent Examination Papers. By ALFRED NIXON, F.C.A., F.S.A.A., Principal of the Central Commercial Evening School, Manchester. 3s.

Longmans' Worked Studies and Questions in the Theory and Practice of Book-keeping and Advanced Accounts (Banking and Exchange). By ALFRED NIXON, F.C.A., F.S.A.A. 3s. 6d.

Commercial Correspondence. With numerous Examples. By J. ADAM, M.A., formerly Principal of Pachaiyappa's College, Madras. 3s.

Handbook of Commercial Geography. By G. G. CHISHOLM, M.A., B.Sc. Seventh Edition, with an Additional Chapter on Trade Routes. With 31 Maps and 8 Diagrams. 8vo, 15s. net.

A Smaller Commercial Geography. By G. G. CHISHOLM, M.A., B.Sc., etc. 3s. 6d.

A Manual of Commercial Instruction. By A. SUTHERLAND, M.A. 2s. 6d.

French Commercial Correspondence. With Exercises. French-English and English-French Glossaries, Hints on Letter Writing, etc. By E. JANAU. 2s. 6d.

A Course of Commercial German, comprising Sketch of Grammar, Systematic Vocabularies, Reading Lessons, Business Dialogues and Commercial Letters, with Tables and Map. By E. E. WHITFIELD, M.A., and CARL KAISER. Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.

German Commercial Correspondence. With Exercises, German-English and English-German Glossaries, Hints on Letter Writing, etc. By J. T. DANN. 2s. 6d.

SCHOOL LIBRARY

X-27670

University of California
SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY
405 Hilgard Avenue, Los Angeles, CA 90024-1388
Return this material to the library
from which it was borrowed.

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



A 000 526 857 8

ia